



*The Story of the New
Immortals,
Part I:*

The End of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography

By

Richard O'Decatur

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

The End of the Beginning

***The Story of the New
Immortals,
Part 3:***

The End of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography

By

Richard O'Decatur

Last Edit: May 2022

This Book is dedicated to my son, Vince, the most resilient person I have ever known. In his first year of life, he was given little chance of living through his teen years. He only had one kidney that was not working well, his second kidney was just a small knot that had not developed. These problems had caused him to have extremely high blood pressure about three time higher than what most people have. I remember when I visited him in the hospital, from within the oxygen tent with tubes and IV's stuck in his little fevered body, while he could barely move, I would always see on his face the biggest smile and grin I have ever seen that told me that he would not give up as he had a determination to live no matter what condition he found himself facing. I remember praying to God to help my child recover as he was trying so hard to live. He survived, but numerous health issues continued; yet, he loved life and kept going.

In his twenties he had a seizure and after he woke up, he came to my house and I took him to the hospital where he went into a coma. The doctor told me that he had damage throughout his brain from oxygen deprivation that must have occurred from not breathing while unconscious from the seizure. He showed me the Cat Scan of his brain that showed damaged areas throughout. The doctor said he had never seen anyone recover from so much damage. Every day I visited my son in the hospital and prayed for him as I felt that he still had much to live for. One week later, I got a call from the hospital about an hour after I had visited my son. I immediately rush back to the hospital; my son had awakened. It took him two years of rehabilitation as he had to re-learn to talk, feed and care for himself. Re- learning to walk again seemed to be the hardest as his brain rewired itself. He had scattered memory loss, but he kept going.

Then in his forties he got some kind of fungus in his blood that began to shut down his organs and brain. His only kidney failed and the hospital doctors put him on dialysis. For three days I watched his life fading, the doctors repeated that he would never regain consciousness, he was dying, and it would not be long. I vividly remember holding my son's hand as I prayed to our Heavenly Father. 'If it is time for my son to leave this world, so be it. But, a father should not ever have to see his children die before him. Please help him recover if he still has things to do that will lead others to Christ.' I then told the doctor, "If anyone can revive and pull through this illness, he is the one." Behind my back the doctor looked at my wife and sadly shook his head, "No". Just a couple of minutes after I said this, I felt my son squeeze my hand. I whispered in his ear that if he could hear my voice to squeeze my hand two times; he did so. I asked him several questions and he squeezed my hand twice for 'Yes' and once for 'No'. He could only move his hand at that time but he was telling me that he was still not through with life. He again made a full recovery and amazingly his kidney started working again after having been completely shut down for nearly 3 months. As I wrote this, his test results show that his kidney is now working better than my own.

Keep the Faith, Son! May we see our Lord's return together in this life. If not in this life, surely, we shall see Him in the resurrection.

Richard O'Decatur

The End of the Beginning

Copyright © 2020 Richard O'Decatur (or Richard Of Decatur) All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any electronic or mechanical means, including information storage and retrieval systems, without permission in writing from the author except by reviewers, who may quote brief passages in a review. Any such copying or reproduction of parts or the whole document must acknowledge the author's name, copyright, and date of authorship and may not be published without the author's written approval.

ISBN 978-1-7349940-2-5

Copyright registration approved in the Library of Congress

Printed and bound in the United States of America

First Printing August 2020

**Published by
R. Wayne Publishing Co.
108 Kimbrough Ct.
Clarksville, TN 37043**

The End of the Beginning

Table of Contents

Principle Characters

Prologue

Chapter 1: A Future Others Do Not Tell You About

Chapter 2: When Will They Come Back

Chapter 3: The Wedding Supper of the Lamb

Chapter 4: The Judgment Seat of Christ

Chapter 5: Religions of Men

Chapter 6: Law and Grace

Chapter 7: The State of the Dead

Chapter 8: Past Errors and Conflicts

Chapter 9: Doctrine of Clean/Unclean Meats

Chapter 10: Other False Practices

Chapter 11: Sabbath and Other Issues

Chapter 12: Teachings about the Annual Sabbaths

Chapter 13: As Sheep Following Human Leaders

Chapter 14: Other Eating and Drinking Issues

Chapter 15: Learning about Time

Chapter 16: The Wedding Supper Ends

Chapter 17: The Return of the King of Kings

Chapter 18: The Missions of the Saints Begin

The End of the Beginning

Chapter 19: Zekiel Meets with Van

Chapter 20: The Meeting with Van Concludes

Chapter 21: Helping a Group of Survivors

Chapter 22: Moel and Marjah's Mission

Chapter 23: Yahweh and Yeshua Discuss Plans

Chapter 24: Civilization Begins Anew

Chapter 25: Establishing True Religious Practices

Chapter 26: Daily Life

Chapter 27: Final Years of the Millennium

Chapter 28: The Return of Satan

Chapter 29: The Second Resurrection

Chapter 30: The New Jerusalem Comes to Earth from Heaven

Epilogue

References and Comments

About the Author

Books by the Author

Principle Characters

Zeke Ryan, also known as Zekiel, a Christian man who was a Minister of Jesus [Yeshua] Christ.

Dee Ryan, also known as Deejah, a Christian woman who was Zeke's wife.

Angie Ryan, the young daughter of Zeke and Dee Ryan.

Kenny Ryan, the young son of Zeke and Dee Ryan.

Dabarel, an angel of Yahweh whose Hebrew name means 'Care from Yahweh'. He had been specially assigned to watch over Zeke and [when he married](#), Dabarel watched over ~~later~~ his [entire](#) family.

Carl Ryan, the younger brother of Zeke Ryan.

Yahweh, the Great Yahweh Elohim Almighty. Our Heavenly Father.

Yeshua, the Son of Yahweh, Jesus Christ the Savior of the World and King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

Daryl Ryan, also known as Darljah, Zeke's father;

Norma Ryan, also known as Norel, Zeke's mother.

Mo Anderson, also known as Moel, Zeke's best friend, a Christian and fellow Minister of Jesus Christ.

Mary Anderson, also known as Marjah, Mo's Christian wife and friend of ~~the~~—Zeke and Dee.

The End of the Beginning

Apostle Paul, a first century Christian Minister and Apostle of Jesus Christ. He authored 14 books of the New Testament.

Apostle John, a first century Christian Minister and Apostle of Jesus Christ. He authored 5 books of the New Testament.

Jan Franklin, also known as Janel, a Christian woman who knew Zeke before the return of Christ.

Van Franklin, the self-righteous husband of Jan who knew Zeke before the return of Christ.

The Beast, also known as the Anti-Christ, the leader of the New World Empire.

The False Prophet, the religious leader of the New World Empire.

Satan, the Devil, the Great Archangel who rebelled against God [Yahweh] whom shall be called Lucifer in this book.

Michael, a faithful Great Archangel of God [Yahweh].

Gabriel, a faithful Great Archangel of God [Yahweh].

Moses, the resurrected great leader of Israel who had led them from Egypt to the Promise Land and taught Israel the Laws of Yahweh.

Elijah, the resurrected Prophet of Yahweh, who tried to turn Israel back to Yahweh.

Lee, also known as Leejah, a Christian leader who helped others to escape from agents of the New World Empire.

Ron, a man who thought he was a true Christian; but was not.

Bob, a man who was not a true Christian.

Johnny, a young man who was the brother of Ron but was not a true Christian.

Jason, a young man who was in prison in a northern nation before the return of Christ.

George, a wiry old man who was not a Christian.

Apostle Peter, a first century Christian Minister and Apostle of Jesus Christ. He authored 2 books of the New Testament.

Apostle Andrew, a first century Christian Minister and Apostle of Jesus Christ.

James, the half-brother of Jesus. An important leader of the Apostles of Christ. He authored one book of the New Testament.

Prologue

Have you ever wondered about how things will be when the End Time actually begins? No, we have not actually entered the End Time even though many church organizations that try to capitalize on the fear they generate with tales of horror have for over a hundred years have said we were in the End Time. Even the disciples of Jesus thought the End Time would begin two thousand years ago. As they trusted in Jesus Christ, they and others of the faith prepared those that followed with words inspired by the Holy Spirit. Those faithful men wrote what we now call the New Testament. The answers to all our questions can be found there and in the prophecies of the Old Testament. However, those answers are scattered and a bit difficult to find.

I have wondered why or how things will happen when we actually enter the End Time as prophesied in the Bible. I have searched for answers all my life and have ended up with more questions than answers. My questions went deeper than what I was taught in the churches I attended. When I tried to ask ministers, after a couple of questions, I was told either “the answer is a divine mystery,” or “boy, you better watch out asking about such things”. Here are a few of my questions.

- What will it be like to rise into the air to meet Jesus Christ when He returns?
- What will it be like to be at the Wedding Supper of the Lamb?
- Why is Satan chained and then released after a thousand years?
- Revelation tells of a First and a Second Resurrection, who will be in them?
- What are heaven and hell really like and who will go there and when?
- Why is there a resurrection of dead Christians if they are already alive in heaven?

- What is the fate of those who have lived yet truly never had a chance for salvation?
- Will infants who die live for all eternity as infants never reaching maturity?
- What form will miscarried or aborted fetuses take for all eternity?
- Will individuals with serious mental problems spend eternity in such a state?
- What will the millennial reign of Jesus Christ on earth be like?
- Does God have plans that will ultimately go beyond the earth into the universe?
- If not, then why did God make the universe with countless galaxies and planets?

If you have read “***The Beginning of the Beginning***” (***The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1***), you already know who I am and how I came to write that book. These books are a continuation of doing what Jesus has called me to do; tell others what He is telling me in His Word and from the dreams and visions He is giving me. That book begins very far back in eternity past before the creation week revealed in Genesis Chapter 1 and covers things that happened until the calling of Abraham in Genesis Chapter 12.

For those who have not read my other books, I want you to know that my inspiration for writing these books is quite unusual. The first book of this Trilogy, ***The Beginning of the Beginning; The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1*** is about eternity past; the second book, ***The Early Years of the Christ; The Story of the New Immortals, Part 2*** is about the life of Jesus Christ from birth to age 30; and this third book, ***The End of the Beginning; The Story of the New Immortals, Part 3*** is about the future. A future that I have already seen in my dreams [at night while I slept](#),

The End of the Beginning

visions [day and night](#), and flashes that have come to me during the day. However, that is getting ahead of what I wish to tell you at this time. I will repeat a portion of the **Prologue** and **Introduction** of ***The Beginning of the Beginning; The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1*** for those who have not read that book.

As an aside, when parts of this story involve scenes in Heaven or the Wedding Supper of the Lamb, I will be using the Hebrew personal names of our Heavenly Father, Yahweh; our Lord and Savior, Jesus, whose Hebrew name is Yeshua; and instead of God, I will use Elohim. I recently discovered that no language on earth contained the letter 'J' until about 400 years ago. There simply was no name, Jesus, in the original New Testament until after the letter 'J' came into being.

Only recently have I seen [a copyies](#) of what is claimed to be a copy of the true original Hebrew/Aramaic New Testament. This was found and transliterated into English. We know that the original scriptures of the Old Testament are written in Hebrew and Aramaic. Let me be clear that I do not have any issue about others who use the name Jesus rather than Yeshua. I read in one article, that the name of Jesus came to us in a two-step transliteration going from Yeshua [Hebrew] to Iesous [Greek] to Jesus^a [English] so Christians do not need worry for these two names, Jesus and Yeshua, are the same as far as a Salvation issue. Rather than use a two-step transliteration process for names, I prefer to use the original Personal name for our Deities from Hebrew. However, in my writings I will mostly use the names most of Christianity understands except when the setting is in Heaven and then I will use the Hebrew names.]

During my life, I have had a number of unusual things happen to me. In the Spring of 1968, I had a vision that I firmly believe came from God. There is no other way to understand what happened to me on that day. In the space of less than a second as I sat at the

dinner table in my home, I was transported and experienced being in various places and watched events that seemed to last for many hours if not days pass before me. It has taken many years before I began to realize what this vision was telling me. In these scenes I saw how my life would go through many changesturns until the last scene in which I leave this world to enter walking from a mountain ridge into the air toward the arms of my Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. Yes, the Apostle Peter walked on water but I will walk on air.

Then another unusual experience happened in the Spring of 1994. After driving for over 16 hours, I was finally able to climb into bed at a motel around midnight. I was exhausted and quickly went to sleep. Not long after I went to sleep, beginning at 3:00 AM, I was awakened twice by a voice asking me to make up my mind and I slid out of the bed onto the floor where I spent some time in earnest prayer on my knees. Then a third time I was awakened by a different voice. When I opened my eyes looking up toward the ceiling, I saw that there was a light in the room as bright as the sun while the night outside the window was pitch black. I sat up and saw an incredible being standing at the foot of my bed. When He raised his arms and showed me the nail prints in both His hands, I knew this was none other than my Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. I slid out of the bed and lay prostrate on the floor before Him. Jesus came to me and raised me up to my feet. He spoke with me what seemed like an hour or more. During that time, He asked me to be His Minister and that I was to tell others what He would reveal to me in His Word. His commission to me also made me His Apostle and Prophet and in time would manifest all the other Ministerial Offices as well [Ephesians 4: 11-16]. After Christ disappeared, I sat on the bed and noticed the clock. It still read 3:00 AM. I thought the clock was broken as I lay down and quickly went to sleep. Then I woke up later and saw that it read 8: 00 AM. This affirmed to me that I had had a vision during the night.

The End of the Beginning

That is all I am going to write about these visions as their content does not directly involve what I am writing about in this book. I have mentioned them because they reveal that our heavenly Father, Yahweh; and our Lord and Savior, Jesus have a very special calling for me to accomplish. Looking back on my life, I can now see that God has sustained my life so I can complete this calling. Since my early childhood, I have been miraculously saved from death many times.

Such as the time when I was 9 years old and fell over twenty feet from a tree onto a pile of wood torn off an old barn. The fall knocked the wind out of me and I almost lost consciousness. When I opened my eyes, I found it was difficult to move. Turning my head to both sides, I discovered huge six-inch-long spikes sticking out of the wood so close they touched the end of my nose. I raised my right hand and felt another long spike almost touching the top of my head. When I was finally able to rise to a sitting position, I found there was a ring of long spikes closely outlining my head, body, arms, and legs. It reminded me of a circus act where a beautiful woman stands in front of a wall while a man throws knives making a circle of knives around their body. Only in my case instead of knives sticking into the wall, I had long pointed spikes sticking out of the woodpile. Honestly, had I landed as much as a half an inch in any direction from the exact position where I landed, I probably would have been killed.

There are many more incidents where my life has been protected supernaturally by God. Again, this is not part of this story. I have mentioned them so you can [better](#) understand that what I am about to tell you is something I believe is unique as well as from God or these unusual and strange things that have happened to me would not have happened.

Perhaps, these events prepared me for even stranger things to happen in my life. At this time, it has been about thirty years since I began having certain dreams that begin in the night while I was

sleeping and often continue to come into my mind throughout the day in flashes. Long ago, I began to jot down notes to help me remember specific things I experienced or saw in my dreams. At times, there was something in a series of dreams that must have been so important that they kept recurring night after night and during the day, the flashes in my mind even interrupted what I was doing. The only way I could stop this from happening was to write about what I had dreamed. There accumulated many pieces of paper with parts of three stories. As I pieced these parts together and began to put them into separate books, the dreams continued as a reminder to finish this and other books that God has given me to write.

I was blessed to have a mother and a father who treated my siblings and me with love, care, and attention. They made me feel special just like God does to each of His children. As I grew into my forties, I never really considered myself as really extra special to God or Jesus Christ. I had certainly not thought of myself as what I understood is a person who is a Prophet of God. Then I learned that a prophet is not just a person who reveals visions about the future. A prophet is one who has a message from God (like Samuel), or who is inspired by God to reveal things that others do not know or understand (like Paul). These things might be about the future, the present, or the past.

About thirty years ago, I began a search in the Bible to see what happened to prophets of old. How were they called by God? Did any of them seek or ask Him for visions or dreams or to even become a prophet? In Genesis 15: 1 it says “*the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision.*” I have read about Abram (who became Abraham) from chapter 11 to 15 in Genesis and nowhere does it say that Abram asked or prayed to the LORD to give him visions or even speak to him. God just did it on His own. The same thing happened to Moses. God sought him out using a

The End of the Beginning

‘burning bush’ rather than Moses actually seeking God especially in the beginning. In 1st Samuel, we read that God called out in the middle of the night several times to get Samuel’s attention when he was just a child.

What about other prophets of the Old and New Testaments? In chapter 6 of Isaiah, we read that Isaiah saw the throne of God in the third heaven and feared for his life. I can identify with Isaiah as this has happened to me. Read about Jeremiah. In chapter 1, we read that before he was formed in the womb, God had ordained him to be a prophet to the nations. Read about John’s visions that resulted in his writing the book of Revelation. Again, none of these men asked God to call them and make them a prophet.

After years of having dreams and visions I believe have been from Jesus and our heavenly Father, I feel compelled to put these things in writing. Am I a prophet? Only time and God can tell if that is so. I am simply going to do what I believe Jesus is telling me to do and that is write this and other books.

I will call this book a Fictional Biography. Why? I am just not presumptuous enough to assume that all that I might write in this book is totally without any error and totally inspired by God. How much my imagination might be mixed with insight that Jesus has truly given me is simply beyond my knowing at this time. I believe that ONLY the Bible is the true Word of God. Every other writing including mine is just as much a work of fiction, opinion, and speculation as it is of fact.

I believe you will find this Fictional Biography about people in the future is entertaining. It will certainly stretch your imagination. I would like to challenge you to find anything in what I have written in this Novel to be contrary to the Word of God. I believe what I have written can be classified as possibilities or even probabilities. My education and career as an Industrial Engineer were heavily involved in statistics and probabilities. I was able to gather facts and

data from past and present events and by using this I could tell what would happen in the future if certain things were done. I was very successful as my projects achieved considerable results in reducing manufacturing costs and improving profits. Even today after retiring when my wife and I are playing cards my mind remembers what cards have been played and many times I tell her what the next card will be before turning it up. I am right much more than I am wrong. She laughs and asks me how I knew what the card was before turning it over. I also laugh and tell her somehow my mind knows what cards are left and I make an educated guess. Casinos do not have to worry about me taking away considerable amounts of their money by gambling. I do not want to be in such places or play card games using money. I know that wrong things happen in such places and I have better things to do.

You may think your ideas about what is being written here are more correct than mine are. Do you know how to establish what a Truth of God really is? Understand this fact. In order to prove what a truth of God is, you must have two or three witnesses or scriptures that are contextually verifiable, and applicable to the specific subject, individuals, place, and time you are considering and studying. Tradition and opinions do not count as facts nor can be used to prove what a Truth of God is.

As you might have guessed, I am using what is called a pen name or pseudonym in publishing this book; *Richard of Decatur* or *Richard O'Decatur*. Actually, this is my New Testament name which follows the New Testament that names individuals using their first name and the name of the city they came from; such as Saul of Tarsus, Joseph of Arimathea, and Jesus of Nazareth. My first name is Richard and I was born in Decatur. So, this is really my name. Anyway, using a pen name has been a common practice for countless years. For example, Samuel Clemens

The End of the Beginning

wrote his books such as *Tom Sawyer* and *Huckleberry Finn* using the pen name, Mark Twain.

I have chosen to use this pen name for several reasons. One, I like my privacy and at this time I am only interested in gaining a following that enjoys reading my books and that will help them in understanding the Truths of God's Word. At this time I am giving these books away for free to those who want to read them and am trusting that God will have those who can afford it, to send a donation so that I can continue to provide the books without any charge. Two, I desired anonymity because I want others to read and consider what I write on its own merit. Few people from my past or present really know me. Today, I am considerably different in many ways than I was twenty years ago. Some of my beliefs have changed dramatically as I have studied further into the Holy Bible on a host of subjects. I have used only what I have learned from the Bible as far as theology is concerned. I have used a very few of other's writings and only as they agree with the Word of God. For well over a decade, I have been removed from institutional thinking that is prominent in all religious organizations.

As I have stated that this is a fictional biography and being a work of fiction, all names, characters, businesses, places, events, locales, and incidents are either the products of my imagination or used in a fictitious manner. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, organizations, past or present, or actual events is purely coincidental.

I want to make the following things clear. My mention of dreams and visions have taken place as I have described them. There are many things that may be real and will actually happen similar to what I have written. As such, it causes me to think I may be doing the work of a Prophet. More importantly, I hope this book will help others come to know Jesus Christ as their Personal Savior as the

terrible things of the End Time the Holy Bible tells of will take place killing billions of people before the Second Coming of Jesus Christ and they might lose out on salvation if they wait. My mention of being in the physical presence of Jesus Christ in the Spring of 1994 and being made His Apostle, Prophet, and Minister directly from Him has happened as I have described and was a vision from God, not a work of fiction. My choosing to use a pen name involves my privacy and does not change what guided my writing this and other books nor my calling.

Richard of Decatur

Author, Apostle, Prophet, and Minister directly called by Jesus [Yeshua] Christ.

Part One: In the Near Future

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 1

A Future Others Do Not Tell You About

As a Christian, you have learned many things in church, from personal Bible studies, and the writings of others. You have no doubt been exposed to many ideas and scenarios about the Second Coming of Jesus Christ and beyond into the future. I think it is kind of fun to use one's imagination to think about possibilities of what may happen in the future. Have any of the questions I presented in the Prologue ever crossed your mind and you too have found that they have not been adequately explained?

This was true in my life years ago. Ministers, books, and even my studies into the Word of God failed to provide me with a clear understanding to answer these and more questions concerning the future. Then something very special happened. I began to have some unbelievably realistic dreams. Some were about God [Yahweh] in heaven and involved things about man's creation that went beyond what I have read in the Bible and all other Christian writings. Other dreams were about what the world would be like when Jesus Christ returns that also went beyond what I have read in the Bible or any other book fact or fiction. I began writing these things down and then put some of them about the past together to form what I called a Fictional Biography of the creation of the world. Later, I began to gather my other notes on my dreams of the future and started writing this book. As you read this book, you will find an account that is more than simply what the world will be like before Jesus returns, but more importantly, what it will be like after He returns. As both of these Fictional Biographies developed, the story flow actually included many truths I had gleaned from the Word of God.

I have felt that Jesus inspired the dreams I have had as well as my writings. Over the years, I began to write down not only my dreams, but Bible scriptures that flooded my mind many times waking me up during the night. When this happened, I was not able to go back to sleep until I wrote down key words to jog my memory when I sat down to write the next day. While I want to emphasize that this is only a Fictional Biography, it offers events and narratives that both compliment and supplement truths found throughout the actual Word of God.

This book is ultimately about man's destiny to eventually be born of Spirit as Sons of God. Read in Romans chapter 8: 14 – 22 to see this is a truth from God's Word.

*¹⁴For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, **these are sons of God.** ¹⁵For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, "Abba, Father." ¹⁶The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that **we are children of God,**¹⁷and if children, then heirs—heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together. ¹⁸For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy—to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. ¹⁹For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing of the sons of God. ²⁰For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope;—*

²¹because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.—²²For we know that the whole creation groans and labors with birth pangs together until now.—²³Not only—that,—but we also who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even

The End of the Beginning

we ourselves groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body.

When God [Elohim] created man, it was The Beginning of the Beginning to start to develop human beings on Planet Earth, that was different from all His previous creations. In this book, which is *Part 3* of a Trilogy called *The Story of the New Immortals* you will read about *The End of the Beginning* and how mankind filled with the Spirit of God will be transformed into Sons of God thereby becoming the new immortals to serve God for all eternity in the future.

Originally, I thought of titling this series of Fictional Biography's "*Athanasia*," the Greek word for Immortality. However, I decided that name might not attract readers as a more descriptive title might. It is a fact of existence that every living thing strives with all its being to continue to live and not die. It seeks immortality on its own but always fails. From eternity past, only Elohim [God] has immortality within Themselves and only They can bestow life and immortality upon other beings.

¹⁴That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: ¹⁵Which in his times he shall show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; ¹⁶Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen.

(1 Timothy 6:14-16 KJV)

As you read this book, you will find the questions presented in the Prologue will be addressed in a Fictional Biography that I believe you will find interesting, intriguing, inspiring and above everything

else worth reading. I hope you will read the entire Fictional Biography as you would other books. Please make a note of the page number of any concept presented that you do not understand or do not agree with. Then after reading the entire Fictional Biography, go back and further examine these concepts using your Bible to prove otherwise if you can.

I realize that some ideas and concepts in this book might make you uncomfortable for you will read things you have never heard before. Again, let me encourage you to patiently read each page and take notes on things and concepts you do not agree with. Afterwards, I hope you search your Bible to ‘*prove all things*’. I hope you will ‘*hold fast that which is good*.’ If you find you have been wrong about something, it will be because the Word of God and the Holy Spirit has changed your mind, not what I wrote. My part is to present ideas and concepts that will cause others to venture deeper into the great truths found in the Holy Bible.

In ***The End of the Beginning; The Story of the New Immortals, Part 3***; the story takes place as man begins to achieve his destiny. When you reach the end of this book, you will find that this is actually only the beginning of even greater events in the story of man and God. This Fictional Biography begins in the future just after the very moment when the dead Saints of God have just been resurrected and the living Saints have just been transformed in the ‘*twinkling of an eye*’ into immortality at the Second Coming of Jesus Christ as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Jesus Christ returns to earth to begin His Millennial reign. With Him are the Saints who are now ‘*Kings and Priests*’ who will rule over the few millions who have survived the End Time destruction. This is described in the prophecies of Ezekiel, Isaiah, Daniel, Revelation, and other books of the New Testament, and the words of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ in the Gospel accounts of His life on earth.

The End of the Beginning

In portions of the story, you will read about individuals recalling or talking about things that happened before the return of Christ. You will read of things happening and what they will be doing involving those who were changed to Spirit and those who remained mortal and unchanged. Some thought they should have been changed and you will find out why they were not. I saw these things in my dreams. I hope what you read will help you change your life if you see yourself like one in this story who was not changed. If you see yourself like one in this story who was changed, be encouraged to continue to fight the good fight of faith in our Lord, Jesus Christ.

So many questions concerning future events involving the Second Coming of Jesus Christ and His Millennial Reign have been raised. Yet, they have not been completely or satisfactorily answered in my mind and the minds of so many. Therefore, I believe that Jesus has inspired and instructed me to now add my writings to those of others. Again, as you read this Fictional Biography, you will find a story line with narratives and events that attempt to explain possibilities of not only what will happen but also why things will happen.

As I wrote this Fictional Biography, my imagination simply ran wild as I tried to describe what I saw in my dreams about what the world will be like and what daily life will be like for mortals and immortals alike. You will read about what people will be doing during the 1000 years of Christ's reign on the earth as well as what happens afterward. I have never heard of any description by others like what I have been inspired to write about in describing these things. As you read, just sit back and enjoy it. Do not try to be critical or so serious about things that really should not cause you to be overly concerned. What I and anyone else think is just as good as so-called Bible scholars and authors of books about the future when describing things in the future that are not absolutely and clearly spelled out in Biblical prophecy of the Bible.

In regard to some things that involve the main character, Zeke Ryan, I was inspired to use some events that actually happened to me. As I dreamed of things happening to Zeke, many times I found myself within the dream recalling things that had happened to me. Sometimes I was off to one side, but in other scenes, I was looking out of his eyes and feeling what he felt that I have recorded in this story. Characters from the Holy Bible such as the Apostle John, the Apostle Paul, the Apostle Peter, the Apostle Andrew, Moses, Elijah, and James are true life characters while most other individuals in this story are fictional. Some characters were inspired by combining and mixing a number of individuals I have known or read about in the distant past. I have tried to disguise the names of all the characters so no one might think that someone in this story is someone they know or is himself or herself. When in the story a person does things that are wrong pure and simple regardless of motive, I have tried to hide the identity of the person that inspired that event as I hope they have since repented and now have a true relationship with God through Jesus Christ.

I have also tried to disguise the names of religious organizations simply because I believe there are good people in them, past and present. Sadly, I believe they are often victims and are ignorant of what has taken place at the top of the church organizations. There are terrible things that have been done by the top leaders and this has been covered up by other ministers who have done or allowed wrong things to be done as well. Again, this is just a fictional story. Judgment of any real person, who might seem like someone in this story, is in God's hands, not the writer of this story.

As I previously wrote, I hope you will simply read the entire Fictional Biography as you would other books. If you want, go ahead and make a note of the page number of anything or concept presented that you do not understand or agree with. Then go back and further examine these using your Bible to prove otherwise if you can. Be sure to check the References as they are meant to clarify

The End of the Beginning

what is written as well as provide Scriptural support that the events are true to the Holy Bible. As I have drawn on my dreams, experiences, and the Word of God as my inspiration for this Fictional Biography, no one should take the words of any man, including myself, as truth unless they clearly understand the Words of God in respect to what is being told and that it agrees with God's Word.

There are portions of this Fictional Biography with dialogue examining elements of theology and doctrine. I expect most readers will have a different opinion or belief concerning certain elements of theology and doctrine related in this Fictional Biography. You might wholly agree with one thing and then pages later totally disagree with another thing I have written. This is no different from just about every other writer that expresses their beliefs in stories they write based on Biblical subjects especially those dealing with End Time events. During my life, I have found that few people absolutely and totally agree on every aspect of doctrine written or implied by their church with everyone else including those of the same church. This is particularly true when considering prophecies yet to be fulfilled. There are now thousands of church denominations in the world with more forming every day. The Bible instructs Christians to not just disagree with what is to them new ideas, but rather search the Bible and prove what is true. (Acts 17: 10 -11)

My greatest hope is this Fictional Biography will be instrumental in causing the continual and thorough search of the Holy Scriptures directly by each reader to find and hold onto the everlasting truths of God [Yahweh], our Heavenly Father, that He reveals to each of us individually. That in so doing we will maintain a strong faith in Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior and live righteously under His blood until we actually meet Him face to face.

This Fictional Biography is written in English, which is a derivative of several root languages including German. I have used Hebrew personal names for Elohim from translations of the Hebrew Bible. When referencing God by name when the scene is in Heaven

or at the Wedding Supper of the Lamb, I am going to use the Hebrew personal names. I believe the reader will quickly grasp which member of the Godhead whether the Father, Yahweh, the Son, Yeshua [Jesus], or the Holy Spirit is speaking or is involved with little difficulty.

Persons, organizations, and events presented in this book are fictional. Any similarities to any real persons, organizations, and events in recent history or the present are simply coincidence. While some individuals and organizations have impacted my life and provided inspiration for various scenarios, I have mixed them up and combined various behaviors in such a way so no one can tell if they or others are the inspiration for a particular character in this story.

I have put this chapter in this Fictional Biography because I am part of this story, as I have interjected comments as the story unfolds to explain what may be otherwise unclear. I am the one who has had the dreams and visions as well as hearing the words of scripture and finally I am putting all these things into this book as best as I am able.

Richard O'Decatur

Author, Apostle, Prophet, and Minister of Jesus Christ

And now, the story inspired by my dreams continues.

Chapter 2

When Will They Come Back?

“When will my Mommy and Daddy come back?” little Angie asked the angel for the umpteenth time.

“You’ll only have to wait just a little while longer, my child,” assured the angel Dabarel [Hebrew name that means ‘Care from Yahweh’] as he walked about carrying her little brother, Kenny, who was sleeping in his arms.

“But, why did they have to leave me?” she said with a whine in her voice.

“They had to go to a meeting with the great King,” he explained, “Remember seeing them as they began to rise up?”

“Yes, toward that bright light in the sky,” she answered as she pointed up to the sky, “we heard some really loud sounds like horns blowing and people shouting. Then we began watching lights like firefly’s way off in the distance start flying up toward the light. Then Mommy and Daddy started glowing. And, and, they began to rise up into the sky like those firefly lights we had seen¹. They looked down at me and smiled. Then I saw you standing by Kenny and me. Then I was not really afraid.”

“Yes, that bright light you see is the great King returning to the earth with a great host from heaven². Those other lights you saw were the dead rising first to meet Him and then those still living like your Mom and Dad were changed and then called to the meeting in the air with the King³. Way up there,” Dabarel also pointed up at the bright light like Angie and then continued, “They will all be returning to earth real soon for they have much work to do. As that bright light grows brighter it means they are coming ever closer to the earth.”

“You say my brother is up there?” a trembling voice asked as a man came out of the darkness of the surrounding trees toward the light of the fire.

“Yes, how are you doing, Carl?” Dabarel asked.

“Okay, I guess,” he answered then he continued after taking a deep breath and sighing, “Zeke was right all along. He told me so many things during the past ten years that I just did not believe, at least not until now. I wish I had listened for then I might be up there with him and Dee.” Carl looked up into the heavens at the bright light as he tried to remember just what Zeke had told him would happen after Jesus Christ returned to the earth.

Yes, his brother Zeke Ryan and his sister-in-law Dee had often told him so many things but more importantly tried to get him to read what the Bible said. Carl’s thoughts recalled that he did not want to believe them. It was all too fantastic and unbelievable to him back when they had begun studying the Bible as if it was a matter of life or death. Things continued to get worse year after year and then it was as if all hell broke loose. Worldwide earthquakes, wars, disease epidemics, even famine not just over in other parts of the world like Africa but right here in the good old USA. That bright light was what they had been looking for all these terrible years. He shook his head trying to figure out exactly how many years had passed since the horrors began. Too many, he answered himself.

Initially, they had been with several other families who had fled from town to town narrowly escaping the forces of the New World Empire seeking all those who believed as his brother. These forces demanded that all must submit and worship its leader and take his mark or they would have their heads chopped off in a public spectacle⁴. It had been like the Spanish Inquisition and the Holocaust rolled into one and magnified many times over. Along the way, it became ever more dangerous and the groups of like-believers had gradually separated into smaller, then even smaller groups to keep from being noticed by those who were loyal to the

The End of the Beginning

Empire. The world seemed to have gone insane, both people and nature itself. Drought and famine grew so intense people became cannibals and animals of all kinds began invading the cities attacking in packs and killing people who chanced being out of their secure homes after dark.

Carl remembered a time when they were close to starving to death. They had become so weak that they could no longer travel. They had sought shelter in a cave. He remembered Dee giving the very last scraps of food they still had to the children. He was sitting by the opening of the cave wondering who would die first; when suddenly he heard the sound of wings. It was not just one or two birds. In amazement, he watched as flocks of birds began to land and place food on a clean flat rock near the cave entrance.

He woke the others and they gathered the food and ate their fill. When they finished eating, the surprises continued. A raccoon came to the cave entrance. It just sat there until all three adults came to the entrance and then it started to walk away. Then it stopped and turned to look at them. It came back a few steps and after looking at Zeke, Dee, and Carl, it sat up and raised its right paw and made a motion that honestly looked like 'come on and follow me'. Then it turned and started walking in the same direction again stopping. After the raccoon repeated the exact same motions again, finally, it dawned on them that the raccoon really wanted them to follow. Then it led them to where safe fresh water was bubbling up from the ground.

That was when Carl first started to hope that somehow, they would survive as long as agents of the New World Empire did not capture them. He continued to think about what had happened and felt a rush that made him feel warm so he started to unbutton his flannel shirt. He couldn't help from smiling as he again noticed that the clothes, they all wore seemed to remain as durable as the day they first fled into the night years ago just like the miracles God

performed for individuals of the tribes of Israel as Moses lead them from Egypt and in sustaining Elijah with food in the wilderness⁵.

Then the light in the sky appeared. At first, it was just a pinpoint but it grew brighter every night. He remembered hearing news flashes and people talking as they slipped into and out of small towns as they journeyed trying to stay ahead of the forces of the New World Empire. Those loyal to the Empire kept saying it was a meteor and might bring total destruction on the earth. Some said it was an invasion from outer space with monsters coming to wreck even more havoc on the earth. Then after the sun had set less than an hour ago, Zeke announced to us all that he was now certain it was the return of the Christ. He and Dee began to jump up and down with excitement and hugged each other for joy. Then suddenly an ear shattering sound of a trumpet and a shout louder than anything he had ever heard seemed to rip the very sky apart. He ran into the forest to hide and when he turned back, he saw Zeke and Dee start glowing and then they began to rise slowly at first and then like streaks of lightning they flew toward the bright light in the sky. Immediately that strange man appeared and began looking after Angie and Kenny. The man told Angie that he was an angel and would take care of them while their mother and father were away. No more wondering or doubts now, Carl thought, that's for sure.

They were gone, but the angel said they would be back in just a few minutes. Why, oh why did I doubt what they told me, Carl pondered? Everything they ever told me has happened, how could they have been so sure it would? The miracles, just being alive after all we had gone through these last few years, why didn't I believe? I had a chance with every miracle and still I just could not accept Jesus as my Savior and follow the way they tried to teach me. Nevertheless, thankfully they never lost hope. I never doubted that if we had been caught, they would never have accepted and given their allegiance to the Beast or taken his mark. What would I have done if we had been caught? Would I have stood with them or given

The End of the Beginning

in to save my neck? At what price is life worth, even this miserable life we have been living? Everyone who has ever lived has died. We will all die. It is just a matter of time. Yet, Zeke had faith in something or rather someone so strong within himself that life itself was nothing in comparison. He had faith in Jesus Christ and not only believed in Him but also lived by what He said in the Bible. Now he had somehow transcended beyond his mortal life without the pain of death.

Carl found it hard not to keep looking up into the night sky. The light kept getting brighter, now just hovering above the world. Must be some party, he laughed to himself, wish I were there. However, wishes and good intentions never made anything happen, did they? He reminded himself. When they come back, I will listen and take what they say seriously. I will read the Bible and follow what is written in it. I want Jesus to be my Savior and Lord just as He was for all those who are now with Him up there in the sky. Whatever it takes, whatever changes I must make in my life, I am going to do it, resolved Carl as he gave thanks to God that Zeke had demanded that he follow them as they had fled from city to city. Those that stayed behind even though they seemed to believe as Zeke and Dee did, more often than not were killed. He stepped closer to the campfire where his niece was warming herself by the fire. She was sitting beside the angel who continued to care for Zeke's children since that very instant, Zeke and Dee began rising to go to that meeting, up there, he told himself, again looking up into the sky.

"Can I hold Kenny?" he asked Dabarel as he looked down to where they were sitting. Carl reached down as the angel lifted the child. Carl took the sleeping child into his arms, then settled down beside them on a bed of leaves with his back next to a log, and gently rocked the little boy. Just holding the child sleeping peacefully seemed to help him relax a little as his thoughts continued to race. Again, he looked upward toward the bright glowing light in the sky.

“When will my Mommy and Daddy come back?” little Angie asked the angel repeatedly every few minutes.

“You’ll only have to wait just a bit more,” assured Dabarel patiently.

“It just seems so long,” she said again with a whine in her voice. She moved closer to Carl and he put his arm around her and held her and Kenny closely. It was comforting to him to be near them and the warmth of their bodies added to the warmth he began to feel inside as well.

“Right about now your Mom and Dad have each appeared before the Great King. They are joining in with the rest of those saved by Jesus Christ in a great celebration while everyone receives their reward,” Dabarel stated. “Then they have to do some planning and make some preparations for their new mission on earth. It’s all happening in that bright light right now at a speed so fast it cannot be measured by any form of time keeping mankind has ever invented.”

“How many others are up there?” Carl asked as his gaze moved from the sky to the angel now standing on the other side of the fire.

“I would say it is so great a number that no human could count it in a thousand life times. Most are those who were resurrected at the King’s return. From Adam to those who were slain for refusing to bow down and obey the New World Empire as it is known by the world. Those deceived people of the New World Empire still left alive are led by the Beast and False Prophet mentioned in the last book of the Bible. Those like Zeke and Dee who survived the Great Tribulation and the wrath of God Almighty during the Day of the Lord were the last called to the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. Are you alright?” Dabarel asked as he noticed Carl shiver.

“I’ll be a whole lot better when Zeke comes back,” he replied. “I’m not really that cold, just kind of overwhelmed by it all.” He smiled at his niece and said, “Don’t worry honey, your Dad and Mom will be back real soon.” They had better be, he thought to himself.

Chapter 3

The Wedding Supper of the Lamb

No words could describe what sensations were going through Zeke's body. The sounds of a great trumpet and that great shout were still echoing across the hillsides as he and his wife, Dee, had been instantly transformed. Then they began to rise into the sky. The experience at first was what he imagined it felt like to be struck by lightning, except the sensation was anything but painful. First, like grabbing a live wire, an electrifying sensation shot from the tip of his toes to the top of his head. Then, his ears began to tingle as a warm feeling swept all over his body like what he remembered experiencing when he had his first taste of Champaign on his 21st birthday.

Zeke began to feel a great surge of power and vitality in his new body as if he were back in his early twenties. He looked down at his feet and saw his old leather sandals had been changed to shoes that shone like burnished brass. He now had the ability to look through his shoes and see his toes wiggle. His clothes had also changed and he found he was now clothed in a brilliant white robe with a golden belt about his waist and a purple colored cape that was swirling from his shoulders. Below him he could see a round blue and green sphere with lacy white clouds quickly becoming smaller like the pictures he had seen on TV years ago taken from a space station circling above the earth. Now he and Dee were ascending just like the lights in the distance they had been watching while on earth.

As he rose ever further above the earth, he heard his daughter and brother talking to an angel. How is this possible, he wondered? He turned his head, looked over at his wife, and saw her looking upward. Her clothing had also changed like his and her white robe and purple cape blazed as it reflected the glow from the place they were nearing. He heard her thoughts, which were just like his, full

of wonder and excitement. Their eyes met and their thoughts were the same, 'Yes, it was worth it all.' Every heartache, every pain, all the struggles, they were nothing now compared to this. His eyes turned upward toward what looked like an enormously large bright glowing cloud. The sound of thunder echoed and lightning flashed continually. There is not supposed to be any sound here in the vacuum of space, Zeke thought. Suddenly, they entered the cloud and the feelings they experienced grew to such heights no mortal could have lived through it.

Suddenly, they found themselves inside some kind of large room. There must be millions, Zeke thought for as far as his eyes could see were men and women, young and old gathering about what looked like thick heavy tables made of crystal that sparkled like diamonds. These were covered with food, drink, flowers, and beautiful sculptures made of precious metals and gems. Everything sparkled and glittered as light reflected off crystal glasses and shining tableware that looked like they were made of pure silver and gold. Embedded everywhere in the furnishings were large sparkling jewels: diamonds, emeralds, rubies, and every other precious stone imaginable.

Looking up and around Zeke discovered they were in some kind of great circular hall surrounding a center platform that held a great table with chairs that looked like thrones. As great as this room appeared all the other surrounding tables seemed somehow very close to the central platform where One sat who shined as the sun in full strength. His glory was so bright at first Zeke had to squint his eyes to clearly see Him. Then Zeke realized that the person sitting on the throne in the center of everything was the One whom he had never seen yet he worshipped in faith and served Him most of his life. Now, with his own eyes he beheld his Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. In his mind, he heard that Jesus name was Yeshua. Yeshua's throne was surrounded by other thrones with many people standing all around excitedly talking and gesturing with their hands and arms.

The End of the Beginning

“Come,” a great voice boomed, “you blessed of our Father to the marriage supper of His Son, Yeshua, the Lamb of Yahweh slain, resurrected, and now forever King of King and Lord of Lords.”

Zeke again, was nearly overwhelmed by it all and had he been mortal his heart would have stopped beating as the power, glory, and magnificence of it all was too great for a human to experience and live. His gaze shifted as they descended to a table where he immediately recognized his mother, Norma and his father, Daryl, both of whom had passed away years before. Dee’s mother and father were also at the next table. As Dee ran to embrace her parents, Zeke felt like his breath was taken away as he could not help but gasp as he put his arms around his parents at seeing them alive again. His father was no longer frail and weak as he remembered seeing him dying of congestive heart failure. His mother smiled in her own special way at him. Both looked younger and more vibrant than he ever remembered seeing them in his earthly life. Then his mind recalled a picture of the two of them on their wedding day taken five years before he was born. Wow, they hardly looked much older than they did in that picture.

As he looked down the long table, he saw others he had known during his life on earth. Nearby he began to recognize some members of his extended family: his grandmother and others whose names entered his mind though he had never seen them in his earthly life. Oh my, thought Zeke as his eyes met his great-great grandfather and great-great grandmother, Miles and Lavender, whose names he had seen years before on a handmade tombstone in the family cemetery having died nearly a hundred years before he was born.

There did not seem to be any eyes that did not have tears of joy flowing as some shook hands, and slapped each other on the back, others embraced, some danced for joy, and all were shouting praises

to the Father and Son. They were all so filled with joy that some could hardly speak but everyone knew what the others were feeling and thinking. It was truly joy unspeakable and full of glory. Praises for the One who made it possible were continually shouted repeatedly throughout the vast arena.

As Zeke looked about, he felt somewhat confused at first that he clearly recognized so many men and women, young and old, and then he remembered a scripture that explained it.

For now we see in a mirror, dimly, but then face to face. Now I know in part, but then I shall know just as I also am known (1 Corinthians 13:12 NKJV).

He turned and looked at his father and noticed that he acted as if he was almost in shock as he gazed about with his mouth moving but no words came out totally in awe of what was taking place. Then his eyes turned to Zeke and in a quivering voice he said, “I just don’t understand all this. I remember being in heaven for what seemed a long, long time after dying with many friends and loved ones, and then suddenly I was standing in an open grave on earth next to another open grave with your mother standing there. Then we both began to rise into the sky. Being in heaven seemed so long yet so brief at the same time and now are we back in heaven again? Zeke, how did you get here so fast? Did you and Dee just die in a car accident or something.

Zeke at first was shocked by what his father had just said. He had believed that when people died, they remained unconscious in the grave until the resurrection at Christ’s return. Some had called this idea “soul sleep.” However, he was not sure what to believe after hearing what his father had just said. He simply answered, “No, Dad it may be hard for you to believe but it has been over 25 years since you passed away as far as time is reckoned on earth. Mom passed away about 10 years ago. Jesus Christ has returned as He

The End of the Beginning

said He would. We have all now transcended to spirit time that lies outside of what we knew of time while in the flesh on earth. That is why time to you seems so long but so short at the same time if that makes any sense,” Zeke replied.

Just at that moment, Zeke’s longtime friend Mo Anderson appeared next to them. He was not alone. Standing beside him was someone he had read about many times and had studied his writings over and over. It was the Apostle Paul.

“Mr. Ryan, Zeke,” Mo said, “Allow me the honor to introduce you to the Apostle Paul.”

“Please, simply call me Paul,” the Apostle Paul said with a warm smile.

“Sir, this is an incredible honor,” Zeke said as he shook Paul’s hand and bowed his head in respect.

“Brother Paul,” Zeke’s father, Daryl said as he took Paul’s hand after Zeke’s hand released it. “There is so much I would like to ask you about concerning your writings.”

“Daryl, Zeke,” Paul began, “In a very short time you will both learn things that you did not know during your mortal lives. Daryl, in answer to the question that is troubling you let me try to explain as simply as possible. Zeke, what you are about to hear is something you did not realize during your life. In respect to those who died in the faith having been saved by grace through Christ Jesus they have spent the time between their death to the return of Christ in a place described as ‘*Abraham’s bosom*’ in our Lord Jesus’ story of Lazarus and the rich man. This place was also referred to as ‘*under the altar*’ in Revelation 6:9 by the Apostle John. Zeke, consider this point. First and foremost is Jesus would never have told a parable or mentioned something that was not true. The fact that He said that immediately after death Lazarus went to a heavenly place and the certain rich man after death went to a burning hell fire proves that happened immediately after death and those places exist.

“Please remember that in the story of Lazarus, Zeke, you overlooked the fact that Jesus specifically stated that ‘*there was*’ a certain rich man and a certain beggar. He did not say, “Once upon a time.” Theologians often tried to make every parable of Christ fictitious without any real persons or situations actually taking place. However, when Jesus said, “there was, or something happened,” His parables were based on actual people and events He had witnessed during the course of human events. So, the rich man and Lazarus really existed and what happened to them was to be a lesson for us all to hear and learn from.”

19There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: 20And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, (Luke 16:19 - 20 KJV)

“Daryl, your heavenly experience was just a temporary state more real than a dream but still not as permanent as we are experiencing right now. This was unlike what Zeke and others who lived to see the return of Christ experienced. They were instantly transformed body and soul into spirit not seeing death. All those who had died in the past, at Jesus’ return, had ‘bodies’ resurrected and their souls were permanently united with a new spirit-born body on earth and were then brought up here. We are not in Heaven at this time but at the Marriage Supper of the Lamb taking place in space just above the earth,” Paul explained.

“I can sure attest to what Paul is saying,” Mo added and then turned to his friend, “Zeke, we both misunderstood the scriptures about what happens right after death. Talk about a shock. When that blade came down and whacked off my head, it seemed like I instantly woke up in a dream. Talk about being on cloud nine, there were soft white clouds and sunshine, music and angelic choirs singing, and I was surrounded by friends and family who had died long ago. No,

The End of the Beginning

it was not the same third Heaven where Yahweh, the Father, sits on His throne but it was some kind of heavenly place just the same. A few times an angel let me see what was happening on earth to you and Dee. You have no idea how close you were several times of getting caught.”

“Wow,” Zeke gasped as he heard that from Mo. He then saw his father’s head suddenly swung about with his eyes searching as far as he could see.

Then Zeke’s father, Daryl cried out in alarm, “Wait a minute. I do not remember seeing any little children and babies in heaven and there are not any here now. Where are all the little children and babies?”

“Daryl, don’t worry,” Paul interceded with a comforting smile as he began to tell him. “The ones here at the Marriage Supper of the Lamb are those who were old enough and mature enough to fully understand and follow essential parts of Yahweh’s great truth and then were called to salvation and they accepted Jesus Christ as their personal Savior and Lord and Master during their earthly life prior to Christ’s return. In another place apart from the Wedding Supper of the Lamb are those little children, babies, and unborn babies that have died since creation began along with those who never had a normal brain to understand or accept Jesus’s truths.

All these are truly innocent of wrong doing yet do not have Elohim’s Spirit imbued with theirs, as they were not old enough or able to accept Jesus as their personal Savior. Yahweh has resurrected them to a physical state but they simply could not survive where we are right now. After we take the earth back from Satan, they will also descend and be temporarily kept in a place in Jerusalem. Eventually they will be placed with married couples about the earth to be cared for and given the chance to grow and mature during the 1,000-year reign of Christ and have the opportunity to learn Elohim’s [God’s] way and then accept Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as Lord and Savior and be saved.”

“That will give Angie and Kenny a lot of new playmates,” Zeke exclaimed after hearing what Paul had said.

“Who are Angie and Kenny?” Daryl asked.

“Oh,” Zeke’s expression fully changed from being perplexed into a big and joyous smile, “You are a grandpa. Dee and I have two beautiful children whom Elohim [God] has kept safe. You will get to see them when we return.”

Shortly afterwards, Zeke got Mo off to the side. “Are you sure about all this heaven stuff and children in another place? I studied the Bible. I almost knew whole books by heart. It just seems crazy that what I believed about the dead including adults and children being ‘asleep’, not conscious in heaven or anywhere else is just not so.”

“Zeke,” Mo assured him, “I still don’t know or understand everything concerning Elohim’s truth and plan for mankind. Truth is no man including you or I fully comprehended the scope, majesty, and fullness of what Yahweh, our Heavenly Father has known from the beginning even to now. We all have a lot to learn including you, and me, brother. There are spiritual things you thought you understood and believed that simply were not true. The same still applies to me and everyone else here except for our Lord. While you have been running around on the earth, after my death, I tried to find out many things, but was regularly told, be patient, in due time you will learn everything you need to know. I was told that we will all get some help from the angels and the Saints we have read about in the Bible with a lot of clarification to show us where we were wrong in our understanding of what the Bible taught on this subject of the state of the dead and other important subjects.”

Zeke responded, “Thank Elohim, we did not have to know or understand every truth but by the grace and mercy of our Savior and our Heavenly Father, we have been saved by faith. I have known

The End of the Beginning

some Christians who called Jesus, Yeshua; and God, Elohim. It turns out that they understood that Their true personal names were in Hebrew and not Greek.”

A voice boomed and everyone’s attention turned toward the center, “*Welcome, welcome my good and faithful servants. Feast and rejoice you servants of the Great Yeshua. Your Lord and Master bids you to celebrate with great joy for you have endured to the end keeping your faith through all your trials below.*”

On the platform near the center table two great angelic beings with their large wings folded stood tall and foreboding yet awesomely beautiful to behold. Their presences seem to proclaim the greatness of those who were seated at the table in the midst. Their identities were the Great Archangels Michael and Gabriel. At the very central position on the greatest throne sat Yeshua [Jesus] Christ whose countenance was brighter than any other being in the great hall. Beside His throne stood two more great angelic beings, Cherubim’s he remembered, with wings that spread out like a pergola above the King. The platform seemed to revolve so all could see and be near to Him. The twelve apostles sat on thrones on either side of Him.⁶ There were also other thrones around a great table in the midst of the great hall where others were rewarded for their lives devoted to serving Yeshua. Those who sat at these places seemed greater but meeker at the same time. Everyone in that meeting was all directly connected and all very close to the great King.

Zeke suddenly realized that he recognized all of them. How is this possible he thought? I have never seen any of them before and have only read about them in the Bible? Yet as Zeke gazed at the spectacle there appeared on either side of the King, men who he somehow knew were Moses and Joshua. Then he recognized others who came up to Him for a brief word, yes that is David and that is

Daniel. Then he saw the Apostle Paul was now on the platform. Right behind him Mary Magdalene walked over to where the Apostle John was seated. His mind reeled.

Then he saw Elijah and Enoch who had been the two witnesses for three and a half years. He somehow knew it had to be these two men who would be the witness because they had never died as told in the Old Testament. He remembered seeing a news flash from Jerusalem about them being killed and their remains left on the street for three and a half days and then another news flash showing them standing up alive and then flying off into the air and disappearing.

Revelation 11:3 - 12 (NKJV)

³And I will give power to my two witnesses, and they will prophesy one thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth."

⁴These are the two olive trees and the two lampstands standing before the God of the earth. ⁵And if anyone wants to harm them, fire proceeds from their mouth and devours their enemies. And if anyone wants to harm them, he must be killed in this manner. ⁶These have power to shut heaven, so that no rain falls in the days of their prophecy; and they have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to strike the earth with all plagues, as often as they desire.

⁷When they finish their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit will make war against them, overcome them, and kill them. ⁸And their dead bodies will lie in the street of the great city which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. ⁹Then those from the peoples, tribes, tongues, and nations will see their dead bodies three-and-a-half days, and not allow their dead bodies to be put into graves. ¹⁰And those who dwell on the earth will rejoice over them, make merry, and send gifts to one

The End of the Beginning

another, because these two prophets tormented those who dwell on the earth.

¹¹Now after the three-and-a-half days the breath of life from God entered them, and they stood on their feet, and great fear fell on those who saw them. ¹²And they heard a loud voice from heaven saying to them, “Come up here.” And they ascended to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies saw them.

Hebrews 9:27 (NKJV)

²⁷And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment,

“Oh, my goodness,” Zeke gasped as his gaze went down to the tables, somehow, he recognized two couples who were going about talking with everyone. Everyone at that meeting were related to these two couples except a very few who were related to only the first couple. He knew their names. The first couple was Adam and Eve; and the second couple was Noah and his wife, Sehaj.

[I have used the first letters of their son’s names: Shem, Ham, and Japheth to make a name for her, Sehaj. You can read more about her in the first book of this Trilogy; ***The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1: The Beginning of the Beginning.***]

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 4

The Judgment Seat of Christ

At the Wedding Supper of the Lamb, things began to change. In flashes that seemed like a bolt of lightning, Zeke began to see people from various tables suddenly disappear from their table and then reappear in a line forming up to come before the King. He watched as one after another, men and women came and fell on their knees before their Savior and now King of a Kings and Lord of Lords, Yeshua [Jesus] Christ. While each one appeared before the King it seemed like each was in His presence for a long time, yet on the other hand it seemed like it lasted less time than a blink of the eye as far as earth time.

Jesus, he thought, Yeshua, my Lord and my Elohim. He watched in awe as Mo and then Mary disappeared, then his mother and then his father. After what seemed an eternity, he heard his name called.

“Zeke Ryan,” the voice called to him, *“Come before me.”* It was the voice of the One who sat upon the throne.

Zeke instantly found himself standing in the line before the throne. He trembled and shook so much he thought he would not be able to keep standing on his feet. What should I say? What can I say, he pondered? Oh, why was I so weak at times? Why didn't I do more, his mind reeled? As he drew closer, he noticed at times the Lord's body was covered with scars and he could see the open gapping wounds in his hands and feet. He could see the scars on His body where hardly a square inch was not ripped apart on His back, legs, and arms. His side showed the deep wound from a spear and around the crown of His head were holes caused by the thorny crown that was mercilessly forced on His head before He was crucified. Then the image changed and he saw the Lord perfectly and

completely with a body without scar or blemish and shining with more power and might than the sun in full strength. These images changed from time to time to remind him of what his Savior had endured for him and for each individual who had ever lived to remind him that He is truly the great King of King for all eternity. Suddenly, he reeled with the realization and memory that he had truly seen the Lord before while in the flesh. Jesus had appeared to him in a vision+ and directly asked him to be his minister. Zeke was almost in shock and could hardly move. Then it was his turn. His strength utterly left him as he collapsed first to his knees and then utterly prostrate before his Lord and Savior, Yeshua [Jesus] Christ.

A kind and tender voice addressed him, *“Zeke, it is good to see you again. Yet, I have known you from the time you were conceived. At the proper time, I called you and you answered accepting Me as your personal Savior and Lord and Master. You have grown in grace and knowledge but more importantly, you have put this to use in serving me by serving my brothers and sisters with love and in faith. Then that night decades ago when I spoke to you and asked you to be my Minister. You accepted and I told you to study my Word and write and tell others what you learned. In doing this, you became my Apostle and Prophet. There have been many whom you have cared for, have taught; have given of everything you have owned and even to sacrificing your own health for their sake. Many of those are here now because of your efforts and they too will be rewarded. Your name shall now be called Zekiel as you are now truly my brother and reborn of spirit just like myself.”* Yeshua [Jesus] then spoke in a low voice that only Zekiel could hear giving him another name that no one else but he and Christ the Lord would ever know, a name that cannot be written or spoken in any language or tongue ever conceived by man. Then King Jesus continued.

“Together with all our brethren we shall serve our Heavenly Father for all eternity. This is just a token of the reward that will be

The End of the Beginning

yours for all eternity,” he said as the two great angelic beings with huge wings turned toward him. One placed a shining scepter in his right hand while the other placed a dazzling gold crown sparkling with precious stones on his head.

He tried to speak as sobs of wonder, joy, sadness, and reverence came from his stammering lips but the only words that his voice could speak said, “Lord, if only I would have...”

“No, Zekiel,” Yeshua interrupted him softly and put his hand on Zekiel’s shoulder. “*You need not try to explain anything that happened in the flesh. I have known your every word, deed and even your very thoughts. I saw that with every mistake you cried bitter tears of remorse and repentance always striving to resist the pulls of the natural man. Rejoice for now you will no longer have any weakness of the flesh. I have paid close attention to you and have known your heart and mind since that very first day and moment when you called on my name and completely surrendered your life to me. Human life is very hard, how well I know. No longer, be ashamed; for your imperfections were forgiven, are now past, and are forgotten. Except for me, no one has ever been able to live a sinless mortal human life. Without the power of the Holy Spirit and our heavenly Father’s help, even I would not have been able to have resisted all temptations and have lived a sin free life. Yet you like the others who are now here never gave up wanting and desiring to be just like Me, living perfectly and holy like our Father in heaven. I heard your prayers each time you confessed your sins and faults. The Holy Spirit guided you in gaining knowledge and choosing the right and resisting the wrong. When you came up from the water after being baptized and as hands were laid upon you, the Holy Spirit became even more a part of you than the heart that beat in your chest.*

“As you matured, I called you to minister and serve the brethren and bring My truth to others. Remember that night as you struggled with the calling to the ministry. You were pleading to our Father

that you would do anything but become a minister. Then I remembered you seeing the struggles and disappointments your earthly father experienced during his life as a minister. At that moment, I knew what I had to do in order for you to make the choice to become a minister for Me. I appeared before your eyes and asked you, ‘Will you do it for Me?’ As you looked upon my nail-scarred hands and into my eyes, you finally cried out “How can I not accept your calling after all you have done for me.” You then asked for the Father to grant you three things to help you perform this calling:

1. That Yahweh would give you a double portion of His Spirit to help you to never commit a sin that would dishonor this calling or say or do anything that might cause anyone to stumble or turn away from Elohim,

2. That Elohim would receive the honor and glory for any good that He might be able to do through you, and

3. That Elohim would direct others to recognize my calling and ordain you to the ministry without you striving to seek such recognition.

Our Father gave you those three requests and you have honored Me with the life you lived and the work you did as a faithful minister of your Christ. Even though some forsook you and Me as the end of time drew near because of you many faithfully endured to the end as many died in the faith. Your faith never wavered and I thank our heavenly Father that we at last have met face to face again,” with that Jesus lifted Zekiel up from his knees and they embraced each other for a moment as both wept for joy. The sound of angels and the great multitude about them resounded in thundering praise and worship as joy and unbounded happiness overflowed.

“Thank you,” replied Zekiel with tears of joy flowing from his eyes while his spirit soared, “My Lord, my Savior, and my Elohim.”

The End of the Beginning

Yeshua [Jesus] then looked into his eyes and smiled, "There is someone special that I want you to meet." Before Zekiel could blink his eyes even at spirit speed, he found himself standing with the Lord on a sea of glass before two great thrones.

"Father," Yeshua said as He bowed, "This is my Brother, Zekiel."

Zekiel was nearly knocked unconscious as he fell on his face, prostrate before the Great Yahweh Elohim Almighty who was sitting on His throne in the third heaven. Even as a Spirit born Son of Yahweh, he felt the presence and power of a being that was so great he could hardly bear it. He then heard a strong but tender voice saying, *"Arise, My Son. Yeshua, please help him up the steps so he can come up here to Me."*

The Lord helped Zekiel to stand up and then helped him almost carrying him up the steps up to the throne. Zekiel was speechless as he stood with knees that seemed to strike each other as they shook. There he stood before his heavenly Father as the Lord sat down on His own throne to the right side of His Father Yahweh. Out of the corner of his eyes he saw four great beasts sitting on pedestals watching him very carefully.

"Do not worry My Son. All who have ever come before Me for the first time are overwhelmed. You are standing in My house in which this throne room is but a small part. There is a mansion that has been built for you which you will inhabit in due time. After Yeshua, your Lord completes His one thousand year reign Our eternal thrones and this House will come to earth where you and others like you who have been born of the Spirit will rule the Universe for all eternity with Us," Yahweh told him.

"Father," Zekiel finally was able to say, "Thank you for loving us, your creation, your children, so much... that You allowed Your Son to die for us."

"You and all my children are welcome. It was Yeshua, who some of you called Him, Jesus, who was the inspiration and driving

force for the sacrifice He became. It was so hard for me at that moment that I had to turn away as He died to keep from turning the whole earth into a smoldering cinder. Before you return to the Wedding Supper, Yeshua, give Zekiel a brief tour of his new home,” Yahweh, the Great Elohim Almighty, our heavenly Father, said with a smile.

Yeshua Christ, then rose, took Zekiel’s hand, and lead him from the throne room. They began to walk on streets made of gold up an avenue with palatial mansions on both sides. At last, they stopped.

“*Well, here is your mansion,*” Yeshua told him as He pointed to the entrance.

They were standing in front of what looked like the grandest palace Zekiel could ever remember seeing. They entered the foyer that had a grand staircase that rose in a curve shape on both sides with a balcony across the top. As they passed from room to room, no words could express the grandeur and spectacular elegance he saw. They opened a wide doorway and stepped onto a balcony on the backside of the palace that overlooked a courtyard with a large fountain and flowers beside the walkways. He saw below him was an outdoor space with lounge chairs and tables for entertaining guests. Zekiel’s mind was boggled by it all. As they transcended back to the Wedding Supper, Yeshua further explained the mission He was sending him on when they returned to earth.

“*When the Supper is over, I need you to return to where you were just before I returned and called you up here. Your children and brother are now wondering how much longer it will be until you get back but do not be concerned. In their time frame you will have been gone for only a very few seconds and a guardian angel is taking good care of them. There is much work for you to do there. There are a number of people who are still alive and I want them brought out of the wilderness to begin a new life as I rule the entire earth*

The End of the Beginning

from Jerusalem. You will be responsible to teach some you have known before who were not transformed as you and others were. You must help them learn what is important and truly accept Me as their personal Savior so they too can become part of our family when it is their time for transformation from flesh and blood to spirit. This will be a new beginning for the entire world. The land I promised Abraham will finally fulfill its purpose. I will see you often in Jerusalem but my presence will be with you all the time. Our tasks will be completed but we only have a thousand years and that will pass quickly. But, first go with this angel, he will explain some more details and further prepare you for your new mission on earth and then return to the Supper to rejoice and celebrate before we begin our work.”

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Part Two: Lessons to be Learned

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 5

Religions of Men

‘Wow, oh my,’ thought Zekiel, as he left the throne on the opposite side from the line of individuals who had yet to face the King in judgment. That judgment had not been like those court scenes he remembered on TV years ago but more like, yes, more like a graduation ceremony, he thought. In all his years of pondering what this was going to be like, he never had a clue about how this would feel to have actually been in it. Then suddenly he noticed the surrounding had changed and they were no longer in the banquet room. He was now passing by others, who were with men and/or angels he told himself. These paired off and suddenly seemed to be inside something that looked like large translucent bubbles.

Then they stopped and the angel spread his hands in a circle above their heads and instantly they were inside their own ‘bubble’. He could see panels on the translucent walls that surrounded them. Zekiel turned and looked fully into the angel’s face and a recent memory suddenly flashed in his mind’s eye.

“Wait a minute,” he said, “Aren’t you the angel who appeared on earth to care for my children just as Dee and I were being transformed? Who is watching over and caring for our children right now?”

“Yes, and as we speak because you also are a spirit being you will be able to see just the smallest change in my countenance like a flicker occasionally that no human eye could see. At that instance, I am present with your children and brother. They cannot see and will not be aware of the instances when I am actually here with you,” Dabarel informed him.

As the angel, Dabarel spoke it was like the wind was blowing upon Zekiel’s face and body only this ‘wind’ penetrated his entire

being. He looked down at his hands, arms, and the rest of himself. It dawned on him that since his change he no longer felt any aches or pain. Well, he thought, as he gazed through his clothing and noticed there were still scars on his elbows, shoulders, and side, he thought, ‘guess I would not be myself if those were not present. ‘Again, he felt a youthful power surging in this new body that he had sensed while young that later faded as years had passed; but now, he remained strong and vigorous. Once when standing very close beside the immense cascading Niagara River waterfall, yes it was then he caught a glimpse of the wonder and power of the Creator Elohim whom he strived to obey and serve with all his might. Another was when he looked out of a crack in the shudders while a tornado was ripping up trees and houses all around his home. Yes, everything that existed did so only by the will and power of the mighty Yahweh.

In his mind, he began to realize that everything he had ever experienced and ever learned was now instantaneously present for him to recall. He could see in his mind’s eye from start to finish every book he had ever read that could now be opened so he could instantly see and read from each page in his mind. Now he could in a flash recall everything in his conscious mind. No more stammering trying to recall something buried in his mind from moments to years before. He recalled all the years of his life and instantly every single detail could now be remembered, along with a great deal he had not noticed at the time, and everything about it was now clear. He could see Elohim’s hand guiding him, often protecting him and his loved ones. Every word of the Bible that he had read so many times along with all the various translations rolled into one incredible message was now perfectly clear. The entire content of whole books appeared more quickly than a single word could be thought in human existence.

Zekiel began to realize that things he had faced in life that took years to unfold now were virtually instantaneous remembered in

The End of the Beginning

such detail and completeness, simply left him amazed. He now began to understand why things had happened as they had. Yes, he thought as he recalled certain difficult situations that he faced, they happened just as they had to happen. Oh, if I only realized then what I know now some things would not have hurt me so much. Oh, he sighed, as he remembered one incident that seemed so important then and now how insignificant it really was. Oh my, he shook his head as he thought about something else that had worried him so greatly. If I had only known what I know now I would not have taken the time to fret one second.

Yes, he could see the hand of Yahweh intervening and answering every one of his prayers time after time. Yes, he pondered, thank you Father for answering ‘NO’ to that prayer so foolishly uttered about that pretty girl he was attracted to in high school. Then He saw the angel Dabarel guiding his nine-year-old body as it fell 20 feet from a tree to a safe landing fractions of an inch from dozens of 6-inch long spikes sticking out of boards of a torn down old barn. These spikes surrounded his entire body so that he could hardly move and how hard it was to get up. If he had landed a half inch in any direction from where his body landed those spikes would have struck vital organs and would have killed him before anyone would have found him and taken him to a hospital. In another instance, he saw Dabarel miraculously guided the large step-van he was driving around a deep trench dug in a road defying the laws or gravity and inertia to prevent a crash that would have killed him⁷.

Yes, he heard Dabarel in his mind; “You certainly kept me busy saving your life. Yahweh had plans for you, I could not let time and chance, end your life before you completed them.”

Time was no more for him; he now knew fully. He could instantaneously recall, analyze, and use more facts, data, and every kind of information than all the computers including the Cray

supercomputers that had ever been built on earth could do even if they all had a billion years to crunch the information. More importantly he had unlimited Spiritual power to discern the absolute truth of all matters and without exception was now able with the Holy Spirit and in his new immortal spirit body to will and only do what was good and right. For an instant he froze, awestruck by the absolute magnitude of all he felt and fully understood. He now turned to the angel, Dabarel and was about to ask him some questions about what he had believed while mortal.

“It is now time for a crash course,” Dabarel said, “So, without further ado let me introduce you to your first instructor, the Apostle John”

“John,” the Apostle John said, as he appeared, “Please call me simply, John.”

“Sir, that is so hard for me to do,” Zekiel said as he humbly bowed his head.

“Zekiel,” John began, “Even in heavenly abodes we are all brothers and sisters in Christ. I was blessed to know our Lord while He walked the earth. I lived beyond the lifetimes of all the other disciples who were also witnesses of His life and teachings. In all those things, I was still just a man as you were. You will do me an honor to call me just by my name, John.”

“John,” Zekiel said, paused, took a deep breath, and then continued with a smile, “What I feel like right now is even beyond anything I imagined. I remember reading Bible scriptures that said when the Holy Spirit joins with our spirit we become literally the children or offspring of Yahweh. This was a hard concept to understand much less explain. When I would read from the Bible or state that we will become like Yahweh a lot of people said I was not only wrong but I was in fact blaspheming.”

“Most people you met did not realize that if there are two opinions and one of them is that of Yahweh, then you either side with Yahweh’s opinion or you side with error. Numerous scriptures even

The End of the Beginning

quoting Yeshua Christ called those with Yahweh's Spirit His brothers and 'joint-heirs with Christ'. Perhaps I should call in our Brother Paul as his writings explained this well," John said. Suddenly, the Apostle Paul appeared.

"Hello, again, Zekiel," the Apostle Paul said, "remember it's just, Paul."

"Paul, Zekiel was asking about what we become when born into the family of Yahweh. I told him you would fill him in," John said, "I will be back later." He said and smiled as he disappeared.

"Wow, thank you," was all Zekiel could say.

"Let us begin," Paul said and then went on telling Zekiel, "I wrote in my letter to the Church in Rome. That became the book of Romans. Bible scholars divided all the letters and writings contained in the Bible into chapters and verses to aid them in studying and discussing various writings. In the entire eighth chapter of Romans and in my first letter to the Church in Corinth that became the book of 1st Corinthians; in the fifteenth chapter, both of these were devoted to clearly explaining that when given Elohim's Spirit, man's destiny is to be reborn as a spirit being like Yeshua and the Father, Yahweh, after Christ returns. This will not be in the form of an angel but actually like how Elohim is formed."

"I think most people questioned or actually did not believe this was man's destiny because some cults added their own spin on it and twisted it into false doctrines. Such as what the Mormon church taught on this subject that went beyond what the Bible states. That cult taught that man has the potential to become even greater than Yahweh." Zekiel stated. Paul could see that Zekiel was able to grasped what Yahweh's truth revealed in the Holy Scriptures and the errors made by men in the various religions they had developed apart from Elohim [God] over the years.

"Ah yes, the Mormon's," Paul paused and sighed, "they went a lot further beyond Bible teachings and really corrupted the idea

based on the writings of Joseph Smith who said he was visited by an angel. Truth is no angel from Elohim visited him but I heard from an angel working in the area where Joseph Smith lived that one of Satan's demons actually visited him. It was bad enough that Smith plagiarized the work of a Presbyterian minister written a decade before as he composed his 'Book of Mormon' but clearly, Satan directly influenced him giving him many strange dreams. In Smith's false teaching, he stated that our heavenly Father was once a man as you were and after some time, worked His way up to where He is now. This gives the impression that some man born on earth might actually become greater than our heavenly Father. If you know the history of Satan, you would clearly see that this was one of his errors in the beginning thinking he could exalt his throne above the throne of Yahweh. It is this kind of error that most people reject thinking anyone saying man can become 'like' Yahweh is the same as saying man can become as great as or greater than Yahweh. The first is not the same as the later. Even now, Zekiel as a truly born-again child of Yahweh, do you think you are or could ever be equal with or greater than our heavenly Father, Yahweh?"

"No way," Zekiel exclaimed, "Even with a few trillion earth years I still would not even be one little bit closer to His Majesty and Power. He has had all of eternity to become all that He is now and will forever grow even more supreme. Most people without reason rejected the idea that Yahweh actually learns and grows in every way. They fail to realize that Yeshua [Jesus] Christ who was truly both God and man is mentioned in Hebrews 5: 8 as learning from the things He suffered. In order to learn, one must add new knowledge thereby increasing their level of understanding from what it was beforehand. The real problem in understanding this concept is mankind has words that he uses to try to define Yahweh and His power and ability and no matter how these words are used or combined they cannot begin to actually describe Yahweh or His

The End of the Beginning

attributes because words themselves create limits and Yahweh is infinite.”

Paul added, “I see you get the point. Consider this; if a man says Yahweh is all-powerful. On the surface that means that Yahweh already has all the power that can be had. However, this also implies Yahweh cannot grow in power. Again, this is wrong simply because it tries to place limits on Yahweh. He was Yahweh from any point in the past that we could consider, as there is no beginning in eternity and He will always be Yahweh into eternity future. When I think of what we have become I see that I now have more of His nature and am actually more like Him now that I am Spirit-born than when I was simply of mortal flesh.”

“I fully agree and understand what you have said. Yes, it is only because His Spirit within us makes it so,” Zekiel stated, “now that I no longer have a mortal flesh and blood body and mind, I no longer have the pulls of the flesh I experienced in my earthly life. I expect to grow as a spirit being but I know no matter how much I grow and over how long a period, I will never reach the level our Father, Yahweh, and our Lord and Savior Yeshua [Jesus] Christ are right now. They also will be growing much greater as eternity rolls on.”

“Well spoken,” Paul acknowledged. He smiled as he recalled his conversations with some angels concerning this subject. Remembering their comments that so few they guarded understood this subject at all while Zekiel showed a great deal of comprehension at least in this subject. Still, there was a lot of room for this newborn Son of Yahweh to grow just like all the others who had been called to the Wedding Supper of the Lamb.

“Are there any ‘Mormons’ here at the Wedding Supper of the Lamb?” Zekiel asked. “I knew several over the years. As I talked with them, I discovered that they did not believe many of the doctrines of Joseph Smith and the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints. They believed the Father, Yahweh, was never a human being and the Son was only a human being for just over Thirty-Three

years. Before that time, They created everything else in heaven and on earth. Somehow, I could not doubt by what they said, how they lived, and what they did that even though they were Mormons, they were as close to Yahweh and Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as I or anyone else I knew at that time.”

“Before I answer that question, let me ask you if you knew any Catholics?” Paul replied.

“Well, yes. Now that you mention it,” Zekiel added, “there were several who like the Mormons I was referring to also appeared to me as genuine Christians as well.”

“Truth is,” Paul continued, “In just about every Christian religion that man concocted including some cults, where the Word of God was present, some members were able to base their faith in the teachings of the Holy Bible having Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as its focus and teaching salvation through faith in Christ. These became true Christians who are now here at the Wedding Supper of the Lamb. Consider that even while many Mormon teachings are not true there have been individuals who have come to a saving knowledge and faith in Yeshua [Jesus] Christ. The same can be said of Catholics. Even from its inception, the Roman Catholic Church was the largest ‘Christian’ cult that ever existed. Its beginning was totally based on lies. The Apostle Peter was never involved in founding that ungodly religious organization that infused pagan philosophies, rituals, and holidays to the extent it is hard to know where truth begins and errors end.

“The Bible teaches that worshipping idols is wrong and that followers of Yeshua Christ must pray to the Father, Yahweh, coming to Him through faith in Yeshua Christ. The Catholic religion taught its members to bow down to statues of Mary, Jesus, and those they considered were Saints. While these were supposed to be a ‘reminder’ of heavenly things, the true religion of Elohim forbids the use of anything even though symbolic, to represent the Godhead.

The End of the Beginning

“Catholics were also taught to pray to Mary and other ‘Saints’ rather than to the Father. This is a form of idolatry as well. The Holy Scriptures reveal that Yeshua plainly said we are to address our prayers directly to the Father. Everything about their ‘Mass’ is wrong from start to finish. There are other errors the Catholic Church introduced over its history but that did not prevent some in that organization from finding Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as their personal Savior and maintaining a true saving faith until they died.

“That is what I understood and believed as well,” Zekiel confessed, “I had several heated discussions over the years with individuals in certain church organizations about who might truly be a Christian. Some in those organizations, whom I hoped were Christians, sure had a very antagonistic attitude toward those of other religious organizations. Let me clarify my understanding as well concerning other religions. I did not think people who were in religions such as Islam, Buddhist, Hindu, Oriental, native American, African, aborigine, and other primitive cultures with religions that clearly did not teach anything about Yeshua [Jesus] or salvation through faith in Yeshua [Jesus] Christ would be transformed or resurrected to become Spirit born Sons of Yahweh.”

“You are correct in this matter,” Paul affirmed, “Elohim teaches that salvation cannot be attained in any other way but through faith in Yeshua [Jesus] Christ no matter how ‘good’ an individual or group might be morally or in helping or being kind to others. I might add that those who were morally upright in the second resurrection will have an easier time accepting the truth and developing faith in Yeshua [Jesus] and having their first chance at salvation.”

[Please note that I have added [Jesus] after Yeshua because that is the only name many Christians actually know. The Hebrew names for the Father [Yahweh] and the Son, Jesus [Yeshua] are their original names. I hope that as you read this and my other books you will gain the knowledge that as the Old

Testament came before the New Testament; the Hebrew names of the Godhead were established before the transliterated names from the Koine Greek names of the New Testament.]

Chapter 6

Law and Grace

As Zekiel pondered the meaning of the many scriptures, he was discussing with Paul, his eyes suddenly focused on Dee in a ‘bubble’ nearby who was talking with the Apostle John. She turned and looked at him with a smile and a wink. ‘My new name is Deejah,’ she thought and then asked him a question. ‘Yes’, she heard him say in her mind as he answered her by thoughts that she heard. ‘Everything just keeps on getting more incredibly wonderful with no end in sight.’

Zekiel then noticed a bubble with his friend Mo in it.

“How much I admired Mo,” Zekiel acknowledged, “He was raised in poverty in a family where his parents did not care to know anything about Elohim [God] or the Bible. Thank Elohim, for his grandmother who planted the seed of hope through Jesus Christ. Life was particularly hard on many who were black like him and his wife Mary. He battled his way through life and reached a crossroad. One road would have led to bitterness, hatred for others, and finally a brutal death. The other road was a call from Jesus [Yeshua].

“One night as he walked by a church on the outskirts of town the songs of that congregation rang out from the joy that Elohim had blessed them with. He could distinguish the voices of black, white, Hispanic, Asian, and others blended together in such a way that it caused his skin to tingle. He stopped and listened as the black Pastor began telling the congregation of how much the Father loved His creation that He gave His only Son to die in man’s place and be reconciled to God. He explained that no matter how hard life was that Christ Jesus, our Lord would make a way for all who called on His name to find a way to live a joyful and fulfilled life.

“For some reason, Mo went up to the door and flung it open. Slowly, he walked into that church down the center aisle all the way to the front. Everyone in that church became quiet as a mouse.

“Then Mo in a voice loud enough for everyone to hear said, “Preacher would Jesus Christ really do that for a person like me?”

“The congregation remained quietly praying while the minister came down from the pulpit to face Mo and look him directly in the eye. Mo then saw scars on the minister’s face that he knew well were caused by knife fights.

“Then the minister told him very bluntly, “If Almighty God through Jesus Christ could save my worthless ass from a life of hell on earth, He could save anyone including you, my brother.” He put his hand on Mo’s shoulder and it was as if a ton of bricks fell on Mo as he collapsed to the floor and began crying out for God’s help and mercy to change his life. Together they prayed for several hours as Jesus took hold of Mo and he was baptized that night and filled with the Holy Spirit as Mo totally surrendered his life to Christ. Through Jesus Christ, the power of the Holy Spirit changed him and he spent the rest of his life seeking the lost with a passion and zeal like no other person I have ever known.

“Honestly, he put me to shame by comparisons. I was raised in a Christian home with a father who ministered for Christ and a mother who was the most loving and kindest person I have ever known. Christ blessed me beyond all measure and though I strived to give my all to serve Him, it was as if I was only doing what was expected of me and what I was taught from birth to do. Mo overcame unbelievable obstacles and many people in that little church where he gave his heart and soul to the Lord thought he would eventually fail. I remember just a little while later, that we met and thereafter, we spent several years laboring together visiting those who wanted to learn the truths of God that we preached. He was closer to me than my own natural born brother was. Heck, I loved him as a

The End of the Beginning

brother and as my best friend. He met Mary and I performed the wedding for them in one of the groups we pastored.

“For several years, we lead over a dozen groups of believers and tried to keep them safe from the evil New World Empire as it grew into a world encompassing power. It tore my heart apart when he and Mary were captured diverting a band of soldiers from finding others who were hiding. As they were led off to prison and torture nearly fifty people escaped because of their sacrifice. I cried out to Yahweh that it should have been me captured and not Mo. He had done so much more than I could ever have done and could have done even more. It was televised for all to see. They stood in chains before the court and proclaimed their faith in Jesus Christ in no uncertain terms. They were even smiling and singing praises to our God till the blade came down on their necks and set them free from their earthly life and the struggles they had endured.”

Suddenly, the bubble with Mo vanished. Then he noticed that other bubbles about him kept appearing and then vanishing. Then Dee and her bubble disappeared.

“What’s happening?” Zekiel asked in a startled voice to Paul.

“Those who are disappearing have completed this task and have returned to the banquet,” he stated simply. “Deejah and Moel have simply completed their tasks.”

“I don’t understand,” Zekiel said, still puzzled.

“Besides planning their new tasks on earth, some have more to learn and unlearn than others,” Paul further explained. “See that man over there?”

“Why, that’s my father. Why is he slumped over and shaking his head?”

“As you know he was a Baptist preacher while on earth. He simply did not understand some important details of certain truths. Like so many because of accepting Jesus as Lord and Savior and

having a living faith God overlooked his errors because of ignorance and imputed righteousness just like He did for Abraham. Now those particular errors are being explained to him. It is difficult for him to accept correction for errors in what he has always believed. It is because he failed in teaching some truths concerning the law that while he has been saved by grace his reward will initially not be as great in God's Kingdom as those who more completely taught and practiced the whole law as our Lord and Master lived and taught in the scriptures."

"Whoever therefore breaks one of the least of these commandments, and teaches men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever does and teaches them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 5:19 NKJV)

Paul continued, "During my life and while I was in 'Abraham's bosom', I discovered that there are two great errors that were taught by religious leaders during the history of mankind and both caused many to sin. The first error was that one could somehow live righteously and earn salvation by their works. By keeping the laws of Elohim, a person generally behaved better than those who failed to keep them but the law was not intended to be an end in itself. The Pharisees of the time when our Lord was on earth in human form were an example of this wrong kind of thinking. Also, realize that such believers usually add many of their own laws based on traditions demanding obedience to them to the extent of setting aside the Ten Commandments of Yahweh in doing so. Such teachings eventually lead one to believe that they earned salvation by keeping the laws of Yahweh and their laws while the grace of Yahweh became less important totally forgetting the example of Abraham who lived by faith and obedience to Yahweh.

"However, let us not ignore that simply having faith in Jesus Christ and obeying Yahweh is in no way earning our salvation by

The End of the Beginning

works. In the latter years, some who initially taught about Jesus Christ and His redeeming death for the sinner began to be so hung up on keeping the strict letter of the Ten Commandments they forgot all about grace and literally taught salvation was the result of your works of keeping those laws faithfully. Most people really did not understand that truly believing in Jesus meant that your belief that He is the Christ the Son of the Living God must be grounded in a living faith that empowers you to strive to obey Him and do your best to live the Way He taught in His Word. This includes the spirit even more so than the letter of the law. This also includes growing in faith and knowledge as well as not just thinking or saying but actually doing things that express the love of God toward others.”

Zekiel recalled a truth he had followed during his earthly life as was written in the following scripture.

"And we are His witnesses to these things, and so also is the Holy Spirit whom God has given to those who obey Him." (Acts 5:32 NKJV)

“Yes, that is so very important because the fallen angels and Satan himself believe in Yahweh and that Jesus is the Christ yet they will not obey Him and have forsaken the love of Yahweh. The Holy Spirit is only given to those who obey Yahweh,” Zekiel affirmed as he recalled the scripture.

"You believe that there is one Elohim. You do well. Even the demons believe; and tremble! But do you want to know, O foolish man, that faith without works is dead?" (James 2:19, 20 NKJV)

“Works do not save us but if the grace of Yahweh is truly in our hearts there will be works because we develop the nature of Elohim and His love in us is out going toward others in deed as well as in word and thought. This leads to the second great error. So many were confused by religious leaders who virtually gave them a

‘license to sin’ by teaching that one did not have to obey Yahweh or even try to keep His commandments or do anything but ‘only believe’. They taught that righteous living was not required and even went to the extent of teaching that the more one sinned, the more Yahweh’s grace abounded. These kinds of leaders and their followers practiced perversions and thought that as long as they would say, “Yahweh forgive me in Jesus’ name” that Yahweh would have to forgive them. As our brother John wrote, those who are of the world live ungodly lives while those who are truly of the Spirit and saved by grace claim Christ as not only Savior but also Lord and Master and they forsake and always resist the pulls and ways of carnality,” Paul concluded.

“Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He who says, "I know Him," and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of Yeshua is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him. He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked” (1st John 2:3-6 NKJV).

“It is the spirit of the law or commandments that Jesus wanted us to adhere to in order to live a righteous life. While the Commandment stated “Thou Shall Not Murder,” the spirit of that law was that we should help save lives as well as love our neighbor as ourselves. The fruit of Elohim’s Spirit growing in our lives guides us toward living a life that is consistently striving to be obedient to Yahweh’s law and commandments. You knew considerable truths but you were not always right in what you thought was Biblical truth. Some of what you did was not applicable to your time in life and simply was not necessary,” Paul continued to admonish.

“Yes, I made a major turn in my association with religious groups,” Zekiel admitted. “I got involved with one that seemed to have all the answers. There seemed to be so many things that were new to me from the Bible. I was as a schoolchild being taught by

The End of the Beginning

men, I thought were great, knowledgeable, and good. Before then I had never spent much time really studying in-depth the Old Testament and the laws Israel was given by Yahweh. Therefore, I really became mixed up and tried to use and apply them all literally in everything and in every circumstance of my life at that time. I did not understand that many of them were very specific for the nation of Israel for that particular time and place and were not really relevant or applicable for Christians to follow in modern times.”

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 7

The State of the Dead

“I have a question about something different,” Zekiel stated as his forehead wrinkled showing he was somewhat puzzled. “Comments by my father about being in heaven after he died left me at a loss. Even Mo seemed to know things that I did not know about heaven and hell. I now realize that I was a bit closed-minded in some areas while human, but I am now open to hear and learn all truths of Yahweh. You told us of our Lord’s story of Lazarus and the rich man⁸. I had a lot of trouble with this scripture, as it did not seem to fit in with my understanding of the makeup of man as compared to Yahweh. I was led to believe the story of Lazarus and the rich man did not really happen. It was about things that happened just as Jesus returned. There would be a wall of flames coming over the rich man to destroy him and Lazarus would experience what the world would be like after Jesus returns. I remember being taught that other scriptures clearly state that only Elohim is immortal while man is of the dust and mortal. It was also my understanding that certain scriptures tell us that without a body man’s spirit or soul had no consciousness. For instance, Ecclesiastes 9: 10 says; *“Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.”* [KJV]

“So, where did Lazarus really go after death and what kind of body did he have as the resurrection of the dead was not to happen until much later when Christ returned? In addition, how can an ungodly unrepentant man possess a body that can endure the flames of hell? This seems to contradict the teaching of Romans 6:23, *‘For the wages of sin are death, but the gift of God is eternal life through*

Jesus Christ our Lord.’ [NKJV] How can there be life in any form of death?” Zekiel asked as he puzzled over this matter.

“Ah, interesting questions,” Paul responded. Zekiel knows so much about some things but still has a lot to learn in other areas, he thought. Paul began explaining.

“Let me explain the latter scripture first. Notice the scripture does not address the words ‘death’ and ‘life’ in the same way. In the case of ‘life’ the scripture adds ‘eternal’ but does not add ‘eternal’ when speaking about ‘death’. Therefore, this scripture truly does not limit a man’s condition or state in death to that of total non-consciousness or non-existence.

“Now concerning the scripture in Ecclesiastes, what is it really saying? Simply that a man will be judged for what he does, says, or thinks in his earthly life and there is nothing he can do after dying to alter the judgment that will take place after death. It in no way states that there is simply no consciousness after a person dies. It is not about a state of being after death but the conditions for which he will be judged.

“Generally speaking, the entire book of Ecclesiastes is about judgment and not the state of the dead. There is a danger of taking scripture out of context whether by verse or even chapter. The ninth chapter of Ecclesiastes concerns itself with earthly existence and questions the apparent earthly rewards of both ‘good’ and ‘bad’ people. The writer states that it seems unfair that those who are good and those who are evil are both subject to the same fate of death. However, the chapter and in fact the entire book cannot be taken in context unless you read and understand the final two verses of the book that puts everything in the proper perspective.

*13 Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter:
Fear Yahweh and keep His commandments,
For this is man’s all.*

The End of the Beginning

*14 For Yahweh will bring every work into judgment,
Including every secret thing, Whether good or evil.
(Ecclesiastes 12:13-14, NKJV)*

“Zekiel, now please stop and consider all you have read from the Holy Scriptures and what it teaches as a whole and unified body in which nothing truly understood in its writing in one place ever contradicts other things written in others portion of scripture. A man’s soul or spirit does not have a pre-conception existence anywhere or at any time. The Mormon religion teaches that there are ‘souls’ waiting in limbo for a body to come into existence on earth. It goes on to present a progression of ‘souls’ from one body to another as they grow toward perfection or godlike existence. That is absolutely a bunch of malarkey Smith dreamed up that is totally false. The fact remains, Elohim creates a man’s soul in the very instant of his conception, as life begins in the womb. The soul, or as some refer to it as man’s spirit, is not physical like his body but its conscious existence is located while in the body in an area of the brain approximately just behind the optic nerves. It records everything his senses experience throughout his entire life. It is to this soul or spirit that the Holy Spirit bonds upon true acceptance of Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior.

“In physical death, this spirit, or soul again as some refer to it, actually returns to Elohim until the time of the restitution of all things. Even though the man’s body ceases to live, his spirit enters a state that is somewhat like sleeping during which one dreams. This is very hard to describe in the understanding of mortal man, because this is not like any ordinary sleep or dream. It is as if the person is actually there and not dreaming at all. The truth is the souls of those who were saved and those who were incorrigibly wicked are actually there in a place called heaven and hell just as the story of Lazarus and the rich man describes. How can anyone believe that our Savior

Jesus would tell a story of Lazarus and the rich man if it was simply a lie and not the truth. This story would have to be a lie if the teaching of ‘soul sleep’ was the truth, and believe me it is not.

“A person saved by grace is alive and awakes in a place in heaven called the ‘*bosom of Abraham*’ in Luke 16: 23 and ‘*under the altar of Yahweh*’ in Revelation 6: 9. Notice these refer to a heavenly place that is not the third heaven where Yahweh’s throne is located. They are so busy being with others and experiencing the wonders and joys of the heavenly realm also called ‘paradise’ that they hardly have time to think about others they left behind on earth. Some have believed that in general those in this heavenly place could look back down on earth, see, and hear what was happening to others they left behind. Some have also thought that those in hell could do the same. The simple truth is only a very few have been able to do this. Those that have done this were exceptions and did so only briefly like the rich man and Abraham. Your friend Mo was afforded the ability to look down on you a few times while he was in Abraham’s bosom. However, take note that like Lazarus who never saw the rich man suffering, only a very few in heaven have ever seen those in hell much less those still alive on earth. It was Abraham who was able to see the rich man. On the contrary, many who enter the fires of hell initially are able to look up and see those they have wronged enjoying the wonders of heaven while they are tormented by the horrendous agonies of hellfire.

“Those who are saved continue in this state until the resurrection in which the soul returns to earth and becomes one with a new ‘heavenly’ body at the resurrection of the righteous dead, that takes place at Christ’s return. Elohim is able to preserve the atoms of a person’s physical being no matter how scattered and to change these into an immortal body. The soul and this new body are joined forever. This is why there has to be a resurrection from the dead to complete Elohim’s creation of man.

The End of the Beginning

“The spirit of the wicked dead enters a similar state after death. These are those who have known and had an opportunity for salvation in their earthly life yet have rejected Jesus Christ and Elohim’s Plan of Salvation. They are the incorrigible wicked who will never repent of their evil ways just like Satan. The souls of these ungodly sinners find themselves in a place in which the terrors and pains of hellfire are present. The agony they experience is just as real as the pleasure and joy the saved experience in Abraham’s bosom. This too continues until their spirits are reunited with their physical body and resurrected to stand in the final judgment before Jesus where both the body and soul will eventually be destroyed in hell fire.

“And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.” (Matthew 10: 28 KJV)

“There is another group of people who die. Some have understood parts of this truth but not all and that is how the teaching of ‘purgatory’ came into being in the Catholic Church. While mostly in error, that teaching realized that not all who have died are deserving of heaven or hell. However, there is nothing living human beings can do to change the state of these dead: such as moving them to a better place or higher state and eventually to heaven by giving money to a church organization as this erroneous teaching portends.

“The souls of those who are not incorrigible and have never fully followed the ways of Satan have not been saved nor have they been condemned to hell and their judgment is yet to take place. The fact is they have never really had a chance to learn and accept Elohim’s Plan of Salvation through Jesus Christ. This includes those of remote Africa, Asia, and the Islands of the Pacific and other places where the gospel of Yeshua Christ has not been truly presented in their lifetimes. It also includes those whom Elohim has purposefully blinded to the truth particularly most Jews from Christ’s time till the

time He opened their eyes near the end of the age because they were in circumstances where they would not have endured to the end⁹. Elohim did this in mercy not willing that any should perish. Without the Holy Spirit, none of these can enter the Kingdom of Elohim and yet they have done nothing to merit the fires of hell or face eternal death.

“The soul of these individuals is kept in a place we might call hell but is not the same as hell fire where the incorrigible are sent. They ‘wake up’ after the death experience and find many things changed. They begin to ‘reap what they have sown’¹⁰. Those who have done good things but have not had very much in their previous life may find themselves in a much better lifestyle or circumstance such as they may be living in estates with some luxuries while before they lived-in broken-down shacks. Those who had great wealth and while they did some good, it was not at all enough to fairly deal with others or help the poor. These may find themselves in small houses or just rooms and have become servants of those they had ‘lorded’ over in their past life.

“This is like a bad dream and their days somewhat repeat without them realizing it. There was a movie called, “***Dark City***” wherein the inhabitants lived in perpetual nighttime, and their daily lives repeated without them having conscious knowledge of this anomaly. Other movies like “***Groundhog Day***” and “***12:01***” were interesting scenarios where everyone except the main character were experiencing a day repeating over and over without realizing it.

“The souls of those not qualifying for heaven or hell are in as it were a ‘holding pattern’ until the second resurrection following the millennial reign of Christ on earth. At that time, their spirit will be reunited with a physical body just as they had during their earthly life. They will live as Jesus’ friend, Lazarus and others who were brought back to a physical life in the Bible and who eventually died again. This will be the time Elohim's Word tells us about called the

The End of the Beginning

Great White Throne Judgment in the book of Revelation chapter 20. Ezekiel also wrote about the second resurrection in chapter 37 that some may remember as the '*valley of dry bones*' that come together, their bodies reform, and finally the breath of life reenters these bodies and gives them physical life. Just as those who cried out in the passages of Ezekiel they will say, "*We are dead, our hope is lost.*" Elohim will bring them back to physical life and make His Holy Spirit available to them that will learn to believe and accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior and demonstrate true saving faith." On the wall of the bubble scriptures appeared to refresh Zekiel's memory.

"¹Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. ¹²And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before Yeshua, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. ¹³The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. ¹⁴Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. ¹⁵And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:11 - 15 (NKJV))

"¹The hand of the Lord came upon me and brought me out in the Spirit of the Lord, and set me down in the midst of the valley; and it was full of bones. ²Then He caused me to pass by them all around, and behold, there were very many in the open valley; and indeed they were very dry.

³And He said to me, "Son of man, can these bones live?" So I answered, "O Lord Yahweh, You know."

He said to me, “Prophecy to these bones, and say to them, ‘O dry bones, hear the word of the Lord! ⁵Thus says the Lord Yahweh to these bones: “Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. ⁶I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am the Lord.”””

⁷So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and suddenly a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to bone. ⁸Indeed, as I looked, the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them over; but there was no breath in them.

⁹Also He said to me, “Prophecy to the breath, prophecy, son of man, and say to the breath, ‘Thus says the Lord Yahweh: “Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live.”””

¹⁰So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived, and stood upon their feet, an exceedingly great army.

¹¹Then He said to me, “Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel. They indeed say, ‘Our bones are dry, our hope is lost, and we ourselves cut off!’

¹²Therefore prophecy and say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord Yahweh: “Behold, O My people, I will open your graves and cause you to come up from your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. ¹³Then you shall know that I am the Lord, when I have opened your graves, O My people, and brought you up from your graves. ¹⁴I will put My Spirit in you, and you shall live, and I will place you in your own land. Then you shall know that I, Yahweh, have spoken it and performed it,” says Yahweh.’” (Ezekiel 37:2 - 14 (NKJV))

The End of the Beginning

"Is this a 'second chance' at salvation," Zekiel questioned.

"There is no second chance. However, Yahweh has promised all shall have a first chance and that is what these people will have," Paul responded. "I wrote about this in one of my letters that became God's Word. Specifically, Yahweh opened the minds of some to hear and be saved before Christ returned while He has allowed or even prevented others from understanding His truth and be saved before the return of Christ. The idea that Yahweh would close their mind so they did not have a chance to understand and then would condemn them to hell, goes totally against everything the Bible teaches about the nature of Yahweh."

25 For I do not desire, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own opinion, that blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. 26 And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written:

*"The Deliverer will come out of Zion,
And He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob;
27 For this is My covenant with them,
When I take away their sins."*

(Romans 11:25 -:27 (NKJV))

"¹¹Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of Elohim: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables: ¹²That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them." (Mark 4:11 - 12 (KJV))

"Then wouldn't it have been better to not try to get people saved before the return of Christ if they would be able to be saved after Christ returned?" Zekiel asked.

"Oh no," exclaimed Paul, "the first resurrection is better than the second."

Zekiel looked over at another bubble and saw the Apostle John look his way and nod in agreement with Paul.

"Who could know the mind of Yahweh as to whom He would call and when? From the Day of Pentecost after our Lord's ascension back to heaven, Yahweh opened the door and minds of virtually everyone in all nations to hear the truth and receive salvation through Jesus Christ. The only limitation for most of humanity from that point forward was for those who were saved to spread the gospel to the lost. Zekiel, that was why I and the rest of Yeshua's apostles and followers worked so hard to bring the truths of Elohim and the faith of Yeshua Christ to the masses," Paul stated emphatically.

⁸But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; ⁹That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Yeshua, and shalt believe in thine heart that Yahweh hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. ¹⁰For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. ¹¹For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

¹²For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. ¹³For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. ¹⁴How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear

The End of the Beginning

without a preacher? ¹⁵And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! ¹⁶But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? ¹⁷So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of Elohim.” (Romans 10:8-17 KJV)

“Who knows how someone would react to life's circumstances and perhaps become bitter and incorrigible if not reached with Yahweh's message and had a chance for salvation and be part of the first resurrection? Again, that is why others and I gave our lives and went through such trials and tribulation striving to get the message of Christ to all we could reach hoping to save some that might otherwise be lost for all eternity. Not to mention what they would miss during the thousand-year reign of Christ on earth," Paul concluded as a scripture flashed into Zekiel's mind.

“⁴And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Yeshua and for the word of Elohim, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. ⁵But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. ⁶Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of Elohim and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.” (Revelation 20:5 - 6 (NKJV))

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 8

Past Errors and Conflicts

“Brother Paul, has Elohim ever used Satan or a person who is evil to bring truth, real honest to Elohim truth, to anyone on earth?” Zekiel asked as he continued to sort things out in his mind concerning experiences, he faced years before in his earthly life.

“No, never!” Paul answered emphatically, “Satan and his ministers only bring half-truths, slants, and misapplications of the Holy Word of Elohim¹¹. His follower’s use a lot of scripture but all must be on guard even when scripture is quoted as it may not be used in context or properly applied by them.”

“Just like when Satan quoted scripture to Yeshua during the temptations in the wilderness before He began His earthly ministry,” noted Zekiel.

“Exactly,” Paul acknowledged.

“What is so stupid of me is that even after I got out of that cult...” Zekiel began.

“I am glad you finally see it for what it was,” Paul interrupted.

“Yes, and like most people at the time I thought that all cults were cults simply because of what they taught, their doctrines as it were. I finally figured out that even mainstream religious beliefs could be taught while a church organization is or becomes a cult. The transformation from a Christian church to a cult begins as admiration grows for church leaders and turns into a near worship of the top human leader or leaders. Then the leadership begins to move toward more control of member’s lives and promotes the authority of the leadership as directly given by Elohim that no one can question.

“Soon, the organization invades every aspect of its member’s lives without them realizing that they are being herded like cattle and

victimized for the benefit of those at the top. Actually socialist, communist, and fascist political governments are a form of cult. The rule of Hitler, Stalin, Mussolini, and Chairman Mao was supported by others who were mesmerized by these evil leaders. As far as religion is concerned, most of those self-righteous demigods like Herman P. Legweak and his son Grover Ned, really believed they were special and deserved the finer things of life while all those under them were better off near poverty as wealth was called a 'curse'. They even practiced many perversions and immoral sex as they thought they were above the Law of Yahweh and that it did not apply to them. Their judgment will be with those of Christ's earthly sojourn whom He openly and thoroughly condemned.

*"But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. Therefore, you will receive greater condemnation. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you travel land and sea to win one proselyte, and when he is won, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves. Woe to you, blind guides, who say, 'Whoever swears by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gold of the temple, he is obliged to perform it.' Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gold or the temple that sanctifies the gold? And, 'Whoever swears by the altar, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gift that is on it, he is obliged to perform it.' Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gift or the altar that sanctifies the gift? Therefore he who swears by the altar, swears by it and by all things on it. He who swears by the temple, swears by it and by Him who dwells in it. And he who swears by heaven, swears by the throne of Yahweh and by Him who sits on it.*

The End of the Beginning

*Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone. Blind guides, who strain out a gnat and swallow a camel!*

*Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you cleanse the outside of the cup and dish, but inside they are full of extortion and self-indulgence. Blind Pharisee, first cleanse the inside of the cup and dish, that the outside of them may be clean also. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. **Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.***

*Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** Because you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the monuments of the righteous, and say, 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.' Therefore, you are witnesses against yourselves that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets. Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers' guilt.*

"Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation of hell? Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: some of them you will kill and crucify, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, that on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. Assuredly, I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation (Mat 23:13-36 NKJV).

“How apt these scriptures relate to modern day church leaders who became tyrants who lead many astray and some to their death. Such evil men as Jim Jones, David Koresh, and Herman P. Legweak,” noted Paul, “as you saw in the character of all of them was hypocrisy and lawlessness.”

“During those last few years on earth before Jesus returned and my transformation to spirit, I had a lot of rethinking to do about what I had learned and what I should continue and what I should simply put aside and not worry or be bothered with,” Zekiel considered. “Sad to say so many from such church organizations continued in bondage as they somehow could not acknowledge that they had been duped and that the religion they continued or perpetuated under different names and leaders was still a religion of men who often followed Satan and not Elohim.”

“Yes, people could not examine themselves or face the fact that they had made a serious mistake or had been brainwashed by clever leaders who used satanic methods to enslave them. Their egos were continually stroked and inflated as they were duped into thinking they were special and had been singled out to learn ‘secrets’ only the elite of Elohim could understand. People just did not want to discover that they were not so special after all. You also had to swallow your pride as you finally faced the truth and started following Elohim and not man,” Paul told him.

Zekiel shook his head remembering how he had fallen for this scheme and how hard it was finally facing the truth.

“They threw so many laws and scriptures at me that I hardly had time to check things out and meditate on them asking for help from Yahweh and guidance from His Holy Spirit,” Zekiel reminisced.

“What an epiphany it was when I finally began to understand that the law was intended primarily for the lawless and certain things were more traditional than strict directions. Necessary and fitting for

The End of the Beginning

certain time periods and those within them while later some were good as a general guideline yet others were not applicable at all.

“Often false leaders would beat their followers over the head about some non-relevant Old Testament law while they secretly and frequently committed outright sin by breaking physically and spiritually those of the Ten Commandments of Yahweh.” Paul smiled as he saw Zekiel sigh. He knew he was remembering the time when he took the great leap of faith and began breaking the shackles that had enslaved him. He determined that he would no longer be subjugated by others who were blinded by false ideals and teachings.

Zekiel’s smile broadened as he saw several scriptures flash before his mind’s eye.

Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith, from which some, having strayed, have turned aside to idle talk, desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say nor the things which they affirm. But we know that the law is good if one uses it lawfully, knowing this: that the law is not made for a righteous person, but for the lawless and insubordinate, for the ungodly and for sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, for fornicators, for sodomites, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and if there is any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine, (1 Tim 1:5-10 NKJV).

“I remember trying to literally follow so many Old Testament laws I couldn’t keep track of them all. For instance, we were told that we had to bring the ‘[first fruits](#)’, the first of what our gardens produced no matter how small to give it to the Lord even though we were not farmers. We tried to do this like others and on occasion, we sacked up some cucumbers, tomatoes, squash, zucchini, and lettuce and brought it to Sabbath Services. That same day quite a few others did the same. We were told that the way we gave this

offering to the Lord was to give it to the minister of our local congregation. I was cleaning up the hall after services and somewhat accidentally was where I saw two ministers go through the bags taking out the best produce and then rather than give the rest to those who were poor, they simply threw the rest in a trash can. That was the first and last time I fell for that baloney,” Zekiel said sadly.

Chapter 9

Doctrine of Clean/Unclean Meats

“We also were supposed to be so very careful of what we ate even in restaurants. We were supposed to ask if the meat we ordered was cooked in different oil than pork or other unclean meats. In addition, we had to check the vegetables to see that nothing was seasoned with unclean meat as well. This was problematic living in the South as southern cooks were notorious for using hog bones and fat in beans and vegetables.

“The cult seemed to insinuate that eating ‘unclean meat’ was just about as bad as stealing or committing adultery. I heard of a minister who went to visit an elderly widow that was just beginning to learn what we called ‘the truth’ and wanted to be a part of our church. She had worked hard most of the day preparing a special meal for her guests. The minister and his wife sat down at the table and she brought out a large pot roast and sat it down in the middle of several other dishes of home baked bread, pickles and olives.

“The minister’s face turned into a twisted sneer as he asked, “Just what is that?” pointing to the roast. When the woman answered that it was a ‘pork roast’, the minister drew back and stood up almost screaming at her, “How dare you try to serve that filthy swine to us!” Without another word, the couple stormed out of the house as the elderly woman cried her eyes out wondering what she had done wrong. She told one of the church members who was a neighbor of hers what had happened. Guess it was fortunate for her, as she never had anything to do with that cult again. “

Paul interjected, “Apparently, those ‘ministers’ never read Genesis 9: 2-3 (KJV). Where Yahweh told Noah,

²And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be on every beast of the earth, on every bird of the air, on all that

*move on the earth, and on all the fish of the sea. They are given into your hand. **3Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you.** I have given you all things, even as the green herbs. “*

“You know, it was really, as if a heavy chain was released from around my neck when I learned that eating unclean meat is no longer a sin since the New Covenant was established in Jesus Christ. It was your words written to the churches of Rome, Corinth, Colossi, and others that helped me understand that Yeshua had set aside the law of clean and unclean meats that had been given Israel to keep them from forming covenants with the nations they passed through on the way to the Promised Land.” Several scriptural passages ran through Zekiel’s mind.

I know and am convinced by the Lord Yeshua that there is nothing unclean of itself; but to him who considers anything to be unclean, to him it is unclean. Yet if your brother is grieved because of your food, you are no longer walking in love. Do not destroy with your food the one for whom Christ died.

Therefore, do not let your good be spoken of as evil; for the kingdom of Elohim is not eating and drinking, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit. For he who serves Christ in these things is acceptable to Yahweh and approved by men. Therefore, let us pursue the things which make for peace and the things by which one may edify another. Do not destroy the work of Yeshua for the sake of food. All things indeed are pure, but it is evil for the man who eats with offense. It is good neither to eat meat nor drink wine nor do anything by which your brother stumbles or is offended or is made weak.

Do you have faith? Have it to yourself before Yahweh. Happy is he who does not condemn himself in what he approves. But he who doubts is condemned if he eats, because he does not

The End of the Beginning

eat from faith; for whatever is not from faith is sin. (Rom 14:14-23 NKJV)

“Again,” Paul admonished, “It was the inspiration of the Holy Spirit that taught me these things. I was simply the scribe that penned what Yeshua told me. Remember also, that I was a Pharisee before Christ called me. This was a radical change for me. It took a lot of prayer and meditation for me to see this truth.”

Zekiel laughed and then asked, “At the Supper of the Lamb will there be any pork chops or lobster tails?”

“If there were, would you eat them?” Paul asked also laughing at what he in his mind’s eye saw pictured upon one of the tables at the Wedding Supper several trays that held various shellfish and a large platter with a roasted pig with an apple in its mouth. At discovering this several people were screaming and running about in fear. It was scene right out of the Keystone Kops movie reels of the 1920’s.

“Elohim's Word is the best guide to what is good or not good to eat. No, I do not think there will be anything on any of the Lord's tables that would in human life cause us problems. It took a while but I eventually learned that it would not be a sin to eat things prohibited by Old Testament laws. During the last few years, I learned and practiced that whatever the Lord provided for my meal, I would eat without question giving thanks to the Lord for providing me and my family sustenance,” Zekiel answered. “Yet, the subject of what one eats or drinks was often a point of contention in the past in many church organizations.”

“Why do you think Yahweh put what some call a restriction on what kinds of meat is lawful or all right for men to eat?” questioned Paul seeking to learn the extent of Zekiel’s understanding.

“I did not learn about ‘clean and unclean’ animals listed in Leviticus Chapter 11 and Deuteronomy Chapter 14 until I began attending that first Sabbath-keeping church organization controlled

by Legweak. I now know that church organization was nothing but a cult. However; at that time, I completely stopped eating those meats that were listed as unclean. That made things a little difficult at times, as my extended family who had nothing to do with that cult did not agree. Yet, my mother and father were very understanding and tolerated my food preference. It was not until many years later; actually, a couple of decades that I learned not to be so Pharisaical after studying many of your writings such as:

***14I know and am convinced by the Lord Yeshua that there is nothing unclean of itself;** but to him who considers anything to be unclean, to him it is unclean. **15**Yet if your brother is grieved because of your food, you are no longer walking in love. Do not destroy with your food the one for whom Christ died. **16**Therefore do not let your good be spoken of as evil; **17for the kingdom of Elohim is not eating and drinking, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit.** **18**For he who serves Christ in these things is acceptable to Elohim and approved by men. **19**Therefore let us pursue the things which make for peace and the things by which one may edify another. **20Do not destroy the work of Yeshua for the sake of food.** All things indeed are pure, but it is evil for the man who eats with offense. **21**It is good neither to eat meat nor drink wine nor do anything by which your brother stumbles or is offended or is made weak. **22**Do you have faith? Have it to yourself before Yahweh. Happy is he who does not condemn himself in what he approves. **23**But he who doubts is condemned if he eats, because he does not eat from faith; for whatever is not from faith is sin. (Romans 14:14-23 NKJV)*

The End of the Beginning

“During the time I call ‘the time of true enlightenment’, I began to learn more fully from my Bible studies and prayer about this matter. Elohim revealed to me that there were three reasons that He established ‘clean and unclean’ categories of animals. The first was that in Old Testament times, some animals were more prone to carry diseases than others were and the methods of properly cooking meat to eliminate these diseases were not always sufficient. In addition, their methods of preserving and storing meats were lacking so fresh meat was needed. Many of the ‘unclean animals’ lived in a way that breed disease and needed to be kept as far away from human habitats as possible. Some animals and sea creatures were placed on earth to eliminate dead decomposing rotting putrid animals and sea creatures and waste products from them from polluting the earth and seas as well as spreading many diseases that form in such animals and sea creatures. To eat such animals or sea creatures was to consume the very diseases that killed animals or were forming in their decaying flesh or waste products. Cholera was one disease that often-infected people who ate shellfish, especially that which was not properly prepared and fully cooked,” Zekiel began.

“How humans could eat such creatures that feed on animal and human waste and decaying rotting flesh is beyond my comprehension,” Paul acknowledged. “Even though I learned that properly prepared and cooked, others told me they were quite tasty. Still, I am glad I was never in a position in which I had to eat such sea creatures to stay alive.”

“You simply cannot imagine how some cooks can take such sea creatures and prepare them in such a way as they really taste wonderful, at least to some of us humans.” He could not hold back a laugh as he watched the sour expression on Paul’s face like he remembered seeing on the face of a friend who bit into an unripe persimmon.

Then Zekiel continued, “The second reason for requiring Israel to only eat what was called ‘clean’ meats was that sitting down to eat

a meal with others was a form of covenant making. Elohim did not want His nation of Israel to make covenants with the nations they were passing through on their journey to the land promised to their fathers Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob or Israel as his name was changed to. These other nations ate many unclean animals so this prohibition built a barrier to individuals or families from eating with anyone from these nations and thereby establishing personal covenants with them

“But some will say there is no animal as filthy as chickens which also consume their own waste scattered in their feed,” Paul proposed continuing to test Zekiel’s understanding.

“Well, that is true,” Zekiel acknowledged, “and that leads to what I believe is the third reason. I believe that some animals were categorized as clean or unclean to test Israel to see if they would obey Yahweh simply because He said to do something or not to do something with no other logic or reasons to do so or not to do so. This was true in the Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve. The fruit of the tree was not poisonous and did not immediately physically kill them but it did eventually kill them because eating it was spiritually wrong because Yahweh said so if for no other reason. By disobeying Yeshua, Adam and Eve were separated from Elohim who is the very source of life. Let us remember that the key issue to Yahweh has always been that of faith and that requires one to follow Yahweh in the spirit of His law even more so than simply obeying the letter. You summed up the matter as previously mentioned when you wrote Romans chapter 14,” Zekiel noted.

“So, how does one decide what to eat or not to eat?” Paul asked further testing Zekiel.

The End of the Beginning

“Health issues are important and some foods are simply not good for human consumption in general. However, if one is starving, has no other choice, or it would be unkind to refuse a dinner offered by another who does not know any better and the food is properly prepared so it would not make me sick; it would not make me ‘unclean’ or be a sin if I ate something the Bible listed as unclean,” Zekiel conclusively answered. “Since the New Covenant was established by Yeshua Christ all those kind of laws in the Old Covenant have been done away with and that sure makes life easier.”

“Still, there has always been a Biblical connection between eating and drinking that many so-called religious people never made,” Paul mentioned to see Zekiel’s reaction.

“It really puzzled me how religious leaders could quote so many verses, mostly out of context, condemning so many things while overlooking scriptures that do directly condemn other things which they ignored. For example: some have condemned all forms of dancing, playing games using cards or dice, and going to movies proclaiming all these as sinful activities regardless of their content. I never could see any wrong in a family playing a card game together such as spades, pinochle, canasta, or even poker for fun. The Word of Yahweh only made statements regarding sin when an activity involved continually going to excess. In regard to excessive drinking of alcoholic beverages the scriptures often linked this sinful activity and thoroughly condemned it with the sinful practice of overeating which a lot of fat preachers and regular church goers have generally overlooked,” Zekiel recalled these verses:

²⁰Do not mix with winebibbers, Or with gluttonous eaters of meat; ²¹For the drunkard and the glutton will come to poverty, And drowsiness will clothe a man with rags. (Proverbs 23: 20-21 NKJV)

“Simply eating food and drinking alcoholic beverages in moderation was never condemned in the scriptures in both the Old and New Testament. But, when doing either to excess on a regular basis, both Testaments agree that such behavior is sinful,” Zekiel noted.

“The point of doing such on ‘a regular basis,’ is one that many did not get even during the time of Christ’s earthly ministry. For special occasions such as at weddings and other feasts Elohim tolerates some excess in both food and drink but cautions us not to let such behavior extend to our normal day to day routines,” Paul admonished.

“Just like when Yeshua ate and drank with others at feasts and His turning water into wine after those attending the wedding feast had already had a lot to drink. Many criticized Him then and church leaders during modern times openly criticized Him with their teaching of abstinence from all alcoholic beverages at all times. How could anyone possible think they could be more ‘righteous’ than Christ?” Zekiel said as he remembered.

¹⁸For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil. ¹⁹The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of her children. (Matthew 11:18-19 KJV)

“Such false teachings and the keeping of their traditions were a primary reason many Protestant religious leaders over the years ignored and failed to teach from what they called the “Old Testament,” Paul stated. “The 14th chapter of Deuteronomy actually instructed Israel that using wine and even strong drink along with

The End of the Beginning

feasting on finely cooked meats was part of rejoicing before Elohim along with giving thanks for His blessings on special times of celebration.”

22Thou shalt truly tithe all the increase of thy seed, that the field bringeth forth year by year. 23And thou shalt eat before Yahweh thy Elohim, in the place which he shall choose to place his name there, the tithe of thy corn, of thy wine, and of thine oil, and the firstlings of thy herds and of thy flocks; that thou mayest learn to fear Yahweh thy Elohim always. 24And if the way be too long for thee, so that thou art not able to carry it; or if the place be too far from thee, which Yahweh thy Elohim shall choose to set his name there, when Yahweh thy Elohim hath blessed thee: 25Then shalt thou turn it into money, and bind up the money in thine hand, and shalt go unto the place which Yahweh thy Elohim shall choose: 26And thou shalt bestow that money for whatsoever thy soul lusteth after, for oxen, or for sheep, or for wine, or for strong drink, or for whatsoever thy soul desireth: and thou shalt eat there before Yahweh thy Elohim, and thou shalt rejoice, thou, and thine household, 27And the Levite that is within thy gates; thou shalt not forsake him; for he hath no part nor inheritance with thee. (Deuteronomy 14:22-27 KJV)

“Further investigating Verse 26 using Strong’s Hebrew Concordance,” Paul added, “we see the meaning of several key words.”

And thou shalt bestow^{H5414} that money^{H3701} for whatsoever^{H3605-H834} thy soul^{H5315} lusteth^{H183} after, for oxen^{H1241}, or for sheep^{H6629}, or for wine^{H3196}, or for strong drink^{H7941}, or for whatsoever^{H3605-H834} thy

soul[H5315](#) *desireth*[H7592](#). *and thou shalt eat*[H398](#)
there[H8033](#) *before*[H6440](#) *the LORD*[H3068](#) *thy Elohim*[H430](#),
and thou shalt rejoice[H8055](#), *thou, and thine household*[H1004](#),

lusteth: [H183](#) aw-vaw' A primitive root; to *wish* for:—covet, (**greatly**) **desire**, be desirous, long, lust (after).

strong drink: [H7941](#) shay-kawr From [H7937](#); an *intoxicant*, that is, **intensely alcoholic liquor:—strong drink**, + drunkard, strong wine.

“Using alcoholic beverages was one thing my Dad had grown up believing was totally sinful as well as playing any kind of card game using regular playing cards,” Zekiel remembered.

Chapter 10

Other False Practices

“I also knew some religious denominations with ministers that condemned jewelry and makeup for women. Some ministers even forbid women to have short hair and some forbid women from wearing pants at any time or for any reason,” Zekiel commented.

“That is so odd when you read scriptures where Yahweh figuratively decorated Israel with all kinds of jewelry,” Paul marveled. “Still, there have been so many customs mentioned in the Bible that were fitting during certain periods of time yet Yahweh never intended His people to look like oddballs in out-of-date clothing or wearing such clothes that were drab. Some groups of people looked like they were all wearing uniforms with bonnets for women, hats, and beards for men. While He instructed His priests concerning certain garments to wear while caring out temple duties, the common man and even the priest not performing ceremonies could dress basically as they pleased. Only when someone was dressing in a way to deceive or for perverted reasons such as a man dressing as a woman to look like a woman or a woman dressing as a man to look like a man was there condemnation from Elohim’s Word.”

⁵The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman’s garment: for all that do so are abomination unto Yahweh thy Elohim. (Deuteronomy 22:5 KJV)

“There is also no scripture that defines two legged pants as apparel strictly for men or even skirts strictly for women. In ages past, some men in Scotland wore a kilt that looked like a short skirt

but there was no question even then whether the wearer was a man or woman. Some religious organizations actually taught that certain clothes were righteous and their leaders required men and women to dress a certain way. They even dictated whether a man was to have or not have a beard or mustache,” recalled Zekiel. “The length of men and women’s hair was also a controversy with some ministers saying women with short hair or men with long hair were sinning.”

“It is sad that such people formed these traditions misusing or simply ignoring Elohim’s Word as the guide all should follow regardless,” remarked Paul as some scriptures came to mind. “If they had only read and understood verse 16 following verses 14 and 15, they would have understood that I declared the Churches of Elohim did not make an issue regarding the length of hair for men and women not the other way around. No church should have ever twisted my words regarding hair length for either man or woman in later years.”

¹⁴Does not even nature itself teach you that if a man has long hair, it is a dishonor to him? ¹⁵But if a woman has long hair, it is a glory to her; for her hair is given to her for a covering. ¹⁶But if anyone seems to be contentious, we have no such custom, nor do the churches of Elohim.

(1 Corinthians 11:14-16 NKJV)

“I agree. I saw that verse 16 clearly says the true churches of Elohim never had any custom or tradition that dictated the length of hair men or women must follow even when the local custom dictated certain styles during certain periods of time. I have come to realize that religious organizations and their leaders have misused such scriptures to establish teachings for the primary purpose of controlling and manipulating their members,” Zekiel concluded.

The End of the Beginning

Zekiel turned and noticed someone he had known a few years before in a bubble nearby.

“I just recognized that that is Jan Franklin over there,” Zekiel exclaimed and began looking about in other directions. “But I don’t see her husband Van. Where is he?”

Paul told him, “Both knew a great deal of Elohim’s truth like you did. Jan had a true love of Elohim and acceptance of Yeshua Christ as Savior and a living faith that flowed outward toward others just as you and others who are here. However, Van was so hung up on many misapplied Old Testament laws of Yahweh and while he knew many truths, his faith was not complete and he never truly accepted Yeshua Christ into his heart. Had Van lived during Yeshua’s earthly life he would have been called a Pharisee. He used words that he never really meant and he never allowed Yeshua to become his Lord and Master nor his Savior. Sadly, he was so self-righteous that he really did not think he needed a Savior and he never developed a living faith in his heart and mind. He thought simply having knowledge was enough. He thought that he could earn his salvation by his words and works of keeping the law.

“Basically, he became and remained a disciple of Herman P. Legweak. Even though he left Legweak’s cult, the Whole World Church of God (WWCG), he remained faithful to Legweak’s teachings believing by following them he would gain eternal life. He was very careful in what he ate and what days he worshipped on but as you now know these things and others like them alone will not get one into the Kingdom of Elohim. Zekiel, do not be overly concerned. In Elohim’s mercy, Van has survived and is alive right now on earth hiding in a cave wondering where Jan went. He was sound asleep but awoke at the trumpet and shout and she was transformed and brought up here without him seeing her change.”

“I really thought he was a good man especially when I first met him and Jan,” Zekiel acknowledged. “However, there was always a great reluctance on his part to do anything for anyone outside of God’s Church, Worldwide (GCW) that we were both members of and where I met him and Jan. I often noticed that he liked to hobnob with organizational leaders and ministers while saying the ‘right things’ and acting in a way that most thought he was a very devout man. He was even ordained as a minister a few years after I was.

“I am sorry to have to say that his ‘ordination’ went straight to his head. Talk about someone being pompous and big headed. He began to do some things that caused some members and me a lot of trouble. Finally, he joined with a few other ministers and began conspiring and lying about what I said in and out of the pulpit trying to discredit me. I found it hard to believe that those at the top of the organization would support them even when taped messages absolutely proved they were liars. Perhaps they thought those liars could keep more members sending in their tithes and offerings than I could. Man-o-man, talk about being ‘thrown under the bus’.

“I finally decided that I simply could not be part of an organization with leaders that would so deceitfully choose wrong over right. In the end, their concern was more for gaining and maintaining power and money instead of serving Elohim or bringing others to repentance and salvation through Yeshua Christ. I guess they got my letter of resignation. I thought the leaders were my friends but none of them ever truly supported me concerning this situation or tried to discourage me from resigning. I left it all in Elohim’s hands for Him to judge and provide restitution as He saw fit. My calling was to help and teach others even if I had to do so without being part of an organization.”

“There are a great number of people who followed similar organizations as Van and Jan did just before the end,” Paul explained. “Remember, Yeshua taught that there would be deceived

The End of the Beginning

and reprobate leaders in religious organizations who would persecute, cast out, and even put to death those who truly followed Yahweh, thinking they were actually doing Yahweh a favor. They thought that what they knew and being in their ‘special’ organization would keep them safe during the Great Tribulation. Still, many others thought they would be ‘raptured’ before the tribulation began and escape those horrors. Many of these believers in the rapture doctrine lost what little faith they had when it never happened and perished or began to follow the Beast. Some went as a group into several ‘places of safety’ and were horribly slaughtered by those loyal to the Beast power. They could not seem to realize that they were simply following men rather than Elohim and had a religion based more on useless traditions, misapplied knowledge and twisted prophetic ideas than on Yeshua Christ.

“It is a sad thing that many so-called Christians were so self-righteous and arrogant that they failed miserably in developing a true faith and relationship with Christ and learning and properly applying essential true spiritual values and practices. Many had a worldly sorrow for their sins when they suffered because of them. Many would get emotional about repenting and accepting Yeshua as their Savior but the fruit of their lives revealed no faith and no real change toward living a true Christian life. Others who were simply jealous of others, who had true gifts from Elohim, slandered some very fine preachers. Even your father was replaced in a couple of churches by church boards for other pastors when those who controlled the church were convicted of their wrong ways and instead of repenting got the congregation to vote him out. Still he led many to a true and living faith in Yeshua Christ.”

“Guess I should not have been so surprised by what happened to me as I saw much the same things happen to my dad. I think that was one of the reasons I strongly resisted the calling from Yeshua to the ministry. Over the years, I remember the growing horror I felt as

I gradually became fully aware of just how many church organizations which seem good from an outside perspective were simply full of deceit and evil within particularly by ministers and leaders at the top,” Zekiel recalled. “Being called by Yeshua to serve as a minister and teacher of Elohim’s truth, I tried at first to fight the system hierarchy to introduce additional truths Elohim’s Spirit and Word revealed to me. They wanted no ‘new truths’ and only wanted to promote what they had learned basically at the ‘feet’ of Herman P. Legweak. Sure, the leaders or administration had changed and they were not so controlling or dogmatic but the organization and most of its ministers as a whole overlooked or ignored anything new as to Biblical revelation and failed to love, care, and serve and that should have included others who were not part of that particular organization. It was so hard for me to face the truth concerning the GCW organization. I knew that my calling was of Yeshua not men or that organization, so that is why I had to leave and work on my own rather than be part of the hypocrisy and wrong doings. In the end sad to say those at the top were just like all the others basically running that church organization for the money and prestige they felt like so many other religious organizations I had learned about.”

Zekiel’s mind began to replay the end of his experience in his last church organization, the CGW. He again remembered how upset he had been when he had talked with church leaders only to find their reluctance to support him actually resulted in their siding with the conspirators whom they acknowledged had openly lied about him. He sadly shook his head to think of good men doing wrong. In the end, they got what they deserved when their membership and contributions fell as hundreds left that organization as more and more members caught their ministers in various lies and deceitful conduct.

“They did not even have the decency to reply to my resignation letter,” Zekiel said with a sigh.

The End of the Beginning

“On the contraire,” Paul responded. “They sent a letter after the Ministerial Council considered your letter of resignation. It said they were sorry you felt as you did and wished you well.”

“Really, I never got that letter,” Zekiel said with surprise. “What else did the letter say?”

“That Wyatt Wilson represented you and that he and others had been working to resolve certain issues that involved you. However, now that you had resigned the Council felt that there was no further action needed by the Council. Actually, your resignation upset Stan Vaughn. He felt you should not have resigned but stayed so the issues could be resolved rather than dropped.”

“Good ole Stan,” Zekiel remembered. “He was probably the greatest Biblical scholar GCW ever had. Maybe, he was right.”

“No, Zekiel,” Paul countered. “What was done to slight you those last few years of your involvement with GCW was unthinkable wicked and gross negligence. The leaders of GCW including the entire Ministerial Council had over a year to face and resolve the issue of ministers lying about you to other ministers and to members of their congregations. They were not just grossly but extremely incompetent when facing troublesome ministers. Your case was another opportunity to do right and they chose to bury their heads in the sand the same as they did with other situations. Their response was always the same; dragging their feet and trying to side with both parties. They usually tried to get the weakest party to drop matters of disagreement regardless of who was right or wrong. The godly response would have been to gather facts and hold the guilty party responsible along with administering penalties from letters of reprimand to actual suspension of ministerial credentials.”

Zekiel thought about what Paul had said. He wondered if circumstances might have been different. What if he had actually received the letter from the Council? What if he had stayed to fight against his accusers? Slowly, he finally admitted that what had happened was the best and was in fact, Elohim's will. He was meant to be out from under the control of an organization that would have stifled his growth in understanding the great truths of Elohim's Word.

"I wonder what ever happened to Stan." Zekiel asked Paul.

"Why, he was with others of his family on the other side of the Wedding Supper," Paul answered.

"I never saw him there," Zekiel said. Actually, I never even looked for him, Zekiel thought. How many others did I judge wrongly? How great is my need for Elohim's Spirit to correct my attitude and mindset even now as a spirit being? On my own, I am nothing. Connected to my heavenly Father, I can become more like my Lord and Savior Yeshua Christ.

"How about that?" Paul had heard Zekiel's thoughts and said this somewhat sarcastically intending to get Zekiel to simply laugh at himself and not be so serious. Zekiel is so much like me, way too serious. But, we will learn even if it takes half of eternity. "Zekiel, it is time to stop beating yourself up about mistakes made in your mortal life. Now, think about this. Out there at the Wedding Supper of the Lamb were millions of individual saints as well as that many and more of angelic beings all moving about. Even if you had looked for Stan, it is very probable that you might have missed seeing that one particular person. Besides you were so overwhelmed by what

The End of the Beginning

you were experiencing there were more important things for you to think about and do.”

Chapter 11

Sabbath and Other Issues...

“Any other questions?” Paul asked.

“I still feel a little uncertain about some Sabbath issues. Initially, I was taught that in order to be a true Christian, one must keep the seventh day Sabbath from Friday sunset to Saturday sunset. I struggled with that for years and even lost jobs because of it. It was not until just before the Tribulation began that through extensive Bible study and from inspiration of the Holy Spirit, I began to learn what I felt was a new truth. Elohim has always been more intent on us setting one day each week aside as a day of rest and spiritual refreshment and if possible, congregating with other like-believers instead of exactly which day of the week and exactly when to start keeping it. It was the spiritual elements of our lives that needed the rest and nourishment as much as the physical. No one ever knew the exact days of the creation week only that it was seven days and on the seventh day, our Elohim rested. He set us an example of resting every seven days,” Zekiel remembered.

“Okay, no problems there. But, tell me about other things concerning the Sabbath that you have not fully settled in your mind?” Paul questioned.

“Well, it was quite a long time after I began to keep the Sabbath. I remember discovering on my own while studying the Bible something most others did not seem to realize,” Zekiel reflected. “The command made it clear that an individual must rest on the Sabbath, however, when a person was a slave, he had to do what his master commanded within the scope of the Law. It seems among all cultures and civilizations there were certain laws that were common.

Murder, theft, lying, disrespect to parents, and even adultery were usually condemned. In other words, a slave could not ‘murder’ simply because his master ordered him to do so. Yet the Sabbath was not recognized. In respect to the Sabbath, most modern Sabbath-keepers really believed that Elohim also condemned a slave who was ordered to work if he did so. My thinking was that it was bad enough that a slave was not able to rest on the Sabbath and would be beaten and forced to work even if he refused, but adding to that grief supposed Elohim’s displeasure. That simply never seemed right to me. I also believed that employment in modern times was a form of volunteer and possibly limited slavery. However, the economy and trying to make a living to support himself and his family sometimes pushed many men a great deal beyond a volunteer status. Elohim’s Word told men:

⁸But if any provide not for his own, and especially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel. (1 Timothy 5:8 KJV)

“Therefore, if he did not work on the Sabbath as his boss commanded, and he lost his job and could not provide for his family, he was doubly condemned. He simply would lose no matter what he did. I think I finally found the truth of the matter. Consider, the priests were virtually Yahweh’s slaves and they were commanded by Yahweh to ‘work’ on the Sabbath. I cannot help but see that slaughtering and dressing out oxen, sheep, and other animals and birds for sacrificing was very strenuous work. Just ask men who work as butchers of livestock providing meat for their families and others. Yeshua also pointed this out and explained that in such situations, the priests were guiltless,” Zekiel remembered the words in Matthew’s gospel:

⁵Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are

The End of the Beginning

blameless? ⁶*But I say unto you, That in this place is one greater than the temple.* ⁷*But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless.* ⁸For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day. (Matthew 12:5 - 8 KJV)

“Sabbath-keeping organizations had leaders who either did not understand this truth or simply ignored it. To them the Sabbath was a whip they used to keep members under their control,” Zekiel concluded. There were other issues with church organizational leaders that had bothered him in the past. He always found the solutions from intense and personal studies of Elohim’s Word.

“When it came to organization of churches that Elohim’s people were to be a part of, Elohim’s Spirit led him to realize that Elohim never intended for any religious organization serving Him to have a central controlling headquarter. Yeshua intended that a man should be called to the ministry by His Spirit and then develop and build his own congregation basically independent of others. At times, this congregation could join voluntarily with others for the purpose of doing a specific work for a specific time that one small group alone could not do.

“Elohim also never intended that a group of men would run the congregation or the congregation itself would select who would minister over them. If they did not like the minister or what he preached, they could go elsewhere rather than trying to overthrow the minister and choosing for themselves another minister to replace him. While some congregations might have a minister, who did not truly follow the way of Elohim this was better than having numerous congregations following a man at a central headquarters who was not a servant of Elohim. All the horrors of church directed holocausts such as the Spanish Inquisition would not have been possible.

“It is good that you remember and have no bitterness or malice toward any who have wronged you. In time, you need to go back over all those memories with the new insight and vision you now have as a spirit being,” Paul counseled.

“Some of those memories are still painful,” Zekiel, responded, “I really do not like thinking about all that happened back then. I feel like it would be better to simply forgive and forget.”

“One of the tasks that will be given to some saints when they return to the earth is to go to some of those who did them wrong that have survived but were not changed at Christ’s return. They are to teach them what they did not understand or failed to fully grasp and help them come to a true saving faith in Yeshua Christ.”

“That will be a hard task,” Zekiel paused and reflected over several painful memories then replied, “Thankfully, I have been changed from flesh and blood to spirit for there is no way I could possibly even begin to attempt such a task while in human form. Nevertheless, I know that with Elohim’s help I can do whatever needs to be done. Guess I am beginning to understand what Yeshua meant in the scriptures concerning the rich.” Zekiel remembered:

“Then Yeshua said to His disciples, “Assuredly, I say to you that it is hard for a Rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. And again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a Rich man to enter the kingdom of Elohim.” When His disciples heard it, they were greatly astonished, saying, “Who then can be saved?” 26 But Yeshua looked at them and said to them, “With men this is impossible, but with Elohim all things are possible.” (Matthew 19: 23-26 NKJV).”

The End of the Beginning

“Ah yes, you really are beginning to see those things more clearly,” Paul noted. “This scripture can be applied to more than simple financial concerns. Instead of earthly physical riches many men thought they had great spiritual riches and needed nothing else from anyone, including Yeshua Christ.”

“Like the old saying ‘seeing is believing.’ When they see that they have been left behind while others like me who truly believed and acted in faith have been changed it should help them to become less entrenched in their ideals. All they did to appear righteous before others did not count toward shaping Elohim’s opinion of them. But, I must honestly confess that I too was guilty for so long thinking that I had all the right knowledge,” Zekiel concluded.

“But, unlike them you began to realize that very fact and started changing before the tribulation began. Elohim was very serious when He said that He ‘*desired mercy rather than sacrifice*’ and that ‘*all man’s righteousness was as filthy rags*,’” Paul informed him. “He intended that you learn much more than was possible had you remained in that or any other large church organization. He allowed the spirit of division and jealousy to grow and corrupt the hearts of those men to test you and finally drive you out setting you free of any dependence on anyone other than Elohim. As a group, they were not a lot different from other church organizations. Even their seventh day Sabbath-keeping became an idol to them as it had been for the Jews when Yeshua was on the earth.”

“Yes, issues regarding the seventh day Sabbath was so great in their minds it completely overshadowed the grace of Elohim and salvation in and through Christ Yeshua. I completed a study of the physical verses the spirit regarding the letter of the law and the spirit of the law. Using Elohim’s Word with much prayer and meditation I came to an understanding that the spirit always came first even

when it overruled the letter. This was a very difficult concept that many never could understand even as the Jews condemned Yeshua for healing on the Sabbath. We must follow Elohim's intentions because no one should try to use the strict letter of even His law in the wrong way," Zekiel concluded.

"It is clear that you reached the same conclusion that I did when I wrote to Timothy in a letter that became part of the New Testament," Paul acknowledged both remembering and actually seeing those words appear before them inside the bubble.

Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith, from which some, having strayed, have turned aside to idle talk, desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say nor the things which they affirm. But we know that the law is good if one uses it lawfully, knowing this: that the law is not made for a righteous person, but for the lawless and insubordinate, for the ungodly and for sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, for fornicators, for sodomites, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and if there is any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine, according to the glorious gospel of the blessed Elohim which was committed to my trust. And I thank Christ Yeshua our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry, (1st Tim 1:5-12 NKJV)

"Yes, one can now clearly see that some organizations just like the Jews actually made an idol out of the Sabbath day. Members heard week after week information about the seventh day Sabbath but hardly ever heard about the love and grace of Elohim providing us a Savior, Yeshua Christ. Their ministers used the Sabbath like a whip to force submission to their leadership rather than turn their

The End of the Beginning

minds and hearts toward the Lord. It is no wonder that during the earthly life of Christ time after time as He tried to show them the true keeping of the Sabbath, the religious leaders of the Jews rather than listen were intent only in condemning Him for whatever reason they could think of such as breaking their traditions,” Zekiel added.

“They just could not see that even regarding the Sabbath, it is not about the day it is kept but how and why it is kept,” Paul stated.

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 12

Teachings about the Annual Sabbaths

“As I learned from the Bible and discovered greater truths, it kind of amused me that the ‘Sabbath-keepers’ who made such a show of how important the seventh day Sabbath and Holy Days actually followed the false Jewish tradition of sundown to sundown to mark the beginning and ending of each day. Their observances actually did not even keep these days holy during the time Elohim had appointed as He from creation began days at sunrise not sundown. They completely disregarded the fact that Elohim taught His people when the Sabbath began by using the manna in the wilderness. When the seventh day began the Sabbath, the left-over manna gathered on the sixth day was still fresh that morning while on other mornings left-over manna was rotten and bred worms when the sun rose and actually began the day. I never made a big deal out of when the Sabbath began but was supportive of others by concentrating on truly important issues such as faith in Yeshua Christ as our Savior, Lord, and Master and expressing that faith in loving, helping, and patiently working toward obedience to Elohim in all He taught us through His Holy Bible,” Zekiel remembered.

“I was glad as I saw that you were friends with and worked with those who kept different days of worship,” Paul acknowledged.

“It was up to Elohim, not me, to convict each person what was His will in their lives concerning such things. If others had questions or were not content with what they believed or practiced and asked me what I thought, I was ready to share what Elohim had opened my mind to understand and accept. Still, I could never try to shove my ‘religion’ down others’ throats, as it were,” Zekiel, concluded.

“What guided you in keeping the Holy Days mentioned in Leviticus chapter 23 in the Bible?” Paul asked next.

“Well, I had felt it only made sense that the yearly cycle Elohim instructed His people (Israel, in the Old Testament) to keep began in the Spring and not in the middle of winter as modern calendars do. Still, I simply could not find Biblical support directing me to follow the ‘sacred calendar’ of certain Jewish sects. The Jewish religious leaders since the time of Christ on earth developed many new calendar rules for setting or changing the dates of keeping annual Holy Day observances. These rules were so complex hardly anyone could figure out when to keep each annual Feast Day mentioned in Leviticus chapter 23. The end result was that everyone was simply following a doctrine of men rather than Elohim as to when to keep an annual holy day,” Zekiel remarked. “Honestly, how does obeying the rules of one set of men verses another set of men follow Elohim’s direction we read in *Acts 5:29 KJV* *“²⁹Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey Elohim rather than men.*” My wife and I finally sat down and studied all we could find in the Bible about keeping the Holy Days.”

“That was when you made a remarkable discovery about the Julian calendar?” Paul noted.

“Yes, what an eye opener that was. It had been there all my life. Elohim had caused the months of the calendar to carry forward the name of the months in the later part of each year with a number rather than the name of a pagan god or Roman emperor. The month of September was the key. Sept means seventh; Oct means eighth; Nov means ninth; and Deci means tenth. Elohim teaches humanity from the Bible that the moon and sun were to be used as a sign for the seasons.

The End of the Beginning

14And Elohim said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: (Genesis 1:14 KJV)

“The words ‘new moon’ simply means ‘new month’. We found the date in September for the first New Moon that begins the month so we knew the date of the first day of the seventh month. From that point, we marked our calendars to note the New Moon dates to establish the beginnings of each month. Then we worked our way back six New Moons to find the beginning of the first month. This was important because all the Holy Days except one are in the first and the seventh months. We counted and marked off the days of the month mentioned in Leviticus 23 to determine the dates for each Holy Day in the first and seventh month.

“Later, we learned to use the first New Moon after the Spring Equinox to establish the first day of the first month. We counted fourteen days to set the day of the Passover at evening. Of course, the Days of Unleavened Bread started on the next day, the fifteenth and we counted fifty days to reach the Day of Pentecost. The rest of the Holy Days were found by using the New Moons and counting seven of them to get to the Seventh month and the Holy Days in that month. All in all, it was energizing to determine this for ourselves and Elohim’s Word rather than simply trust men and their traditions.

“I remember back during the year 2012 when so many people were terrorized by ancient prophecies of the Mayans, Nostradamus, and others, we marked our calendars following Elohim not man. Interesting that without all the manipulations of the Jewish traditions that year we marked our calendar for the Day of Atonement on the same day as the Jewish sacred calendar. During that year, we kept a private Passover at home on April 4th and then kept the Days of Unleavened Bread April 5th through 11th. Finding the day for Pentecost was a little more difficult. Still, we found that by using

Leviticus' instructions to 'count fifty' we started counting from the weekly Sabbath during Unleavened Bread, April 7th and counted seven weekly Sabbaths and on the day after the seventh Sabbath we kept Pentecost on Sunday, May 20th. Going to the beginning of the seventh month we found in September, we kept the first day that was the Feast of Trumpets on September 16. We simply counted 10 days to reach the Day of Atonement on September 25. Then on the fifteenth day, September 30, we started keeping the Feast of Tabernacles and kept it for seven days ending October 6. On October 7th we kept the eighth day or Last Great Feast Day of the year that John's gospel noted, "*³⁷In the last day, that great day of the feast*" (John 7:37 KJV)," Zekiel was so caught up in his enthusiastic remembrance that he had not noticed an odd look on Paul's face.

For a few minutes the Apostle Paul quietly looked down and did not say a word. Then he looked at Zekiel and shook his head. "Zekiel, there are some things that you have not understood in your mortal life and even at this time you do not know some things that were there in the Old Testament that involve the keeping of the Annual Feast Days of Leviticus chapter 23." He saw the surprise on Zekiel's face as he continued on. "There are instructions that relate to the place where Elohim's people were to keep the Annual Feasts in Deuteronomy chapter 12. Please read them and we shall discuss them afterwards." The following scriptural passage appeared on the side of the bubble.

⁵ "But you shall seek the place where [Yahweh] your [Elohim] chooses, out of all your tribes, to put His name for His dwelling place; and there you shall go. ⁶ "There you shall take your burnt offerings, your sacrifices, your tithes, the heave offerings of your hand, your vowed offerings, your freewill

The End of the Beginning

offerings, and the firstborn of your herds and flocks. ⁷ “And there you shall eat before [Yahweh] your [Elohim], and you shall rejoice in all to which you have put your hand, you and your households, in which [Yahweh] your [Elohim] has blessed you.

⁸ “You shall not at all do as we are doing here today-- every man doing whatever is right in his own eyes--⁹ “for as yet you have not come to the rest and the inheritance which [Yahweh] your [Elohim] is giving you. ¹⁰ “But when you cross over the Jordan and dwell in the land which [Yahweh] your [Elohim] is giving you to inherit, and He gives you rest from all your enemies round about, so that you dwell in safety, ¹¹ “then there will be the place where [Yahweh] your [Elohim] chooses to make His name abide. There you shall bring all that I command you: your burnt offerings, your sacrifices, your tithes, the heave offerings of your hand, and all your choice offerings which you vow to [Yahweh]. ¹² “And you shall rejoice before [Yahweh] your [Elohim], you and your sons and your daughters, your male and female servants, and the Levite who is within your gates, since he has no portion nor inheritance with you.

¹³ “Take heed to yourself that you do not offer your burnt offerings in every place that you see; ¹⁴ “but in the place which [Yahweh] chooses, in one of your tribes, there you shall offer your burnt offerings, and there you shall do all that I command you.

“As you have read this passage, you can see that Yahweh was going to select a place given to one of the twelve tribes to place His

name and that is where they were to celebrate the Annual Feast Days. There was only one exception to these instructions as you drop down to Deuteronomy 12: 21 we read, *"If the place where [Yahweh] your [Elohim] chooses to put His name is too far from you, then you may slaughter from your herd and from your flock which [Yahweh] has given you, just as I have commanded you, and you may eat within your gates as much as your heart desires"* However, notice verse 26, *"Only the holy things which you have, and your vowed offerings, you shall take and go to the place which [Yahweh] chooses."* Do you understand what these verses are saying?" Paul asked.

"I think so," Zekiel answered. "It says the tribes of Israel were to keep the Annual Feasts where Yahweh placed His name. Well, that had to be in Jerusalem for that is where Yeshua went to keep the Feasts."

"There is much more that is written that clarify these instructions even further," Paul continued. "Please consider what was written in the following verses."

And Rehoboam the son of Solomon reigned in Judah. Rehoboam was forty-one years old when he became king. He reigned seventeen years in Jerusalem, the city which [Yahweh] had chosen out of all the tribes of Israel, to put His name there (1 Kings 14:21).

He also built altars in the house of [Yahweh], of which [Yahweh] had said, "In Jerusalem I will put My name" (2 Kings 21:4).

Yet I have chosen Jerusalem, that My name may be there (2 Chronicles 6:6).

The End of the Beginning

“I can see from the Holy Scriptures that Jerusalem is where Yahweh put His name and that is where Israel was to keep the Annual Feasts,” Zekiel stated.

“Zekiel, these instructions do not apply to Israel only. They apply to everyone, including non-Israelite Gentiles even today after Yeshua has returned. Read Zechariah 14: 15-19,” Paul instructed.

And it shall come to pass that everyone who is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, [Yahweh] of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. And it shall be that whichever of the families of the earth do not come up to Jerusalem to worship the King, [Yahweh] of hosts, on them there will be no rain. If the family of Egypt will not come up and enter in, they shall have no rain; they shall receive the plague with which [Yahweh] strikes the nations who do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. This shall be the punishment of Egypt and the punishment of all the nations that do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles.

Paul continued, “Israel and we ourselves are further instructed to come to the Temple in Jerusalem. This could not happen until after the Temple was built by Solomon. Then after the dedication of the Temple, Yahweh said to Solomon.” As he spoke a new scripture appeared on the wall of the bubble.

*I have heard your prayer and your supplication that you have made before Me; **I have consecrated this house which you have built to put My name there forever, and My eyes and My heart will be there perpetually** (1 Kings 9:3).*

“I don’t understand what you are driving at. I fully understand all this,” Zekiel said feeling a little exasperated.

“In 586 B.C., the Babylonians destroyed Jerusalem including the Temple and took many Jews and other Israelites captive and removed them from their homeland. From that time until the King of Persia, Cyrus, conquered the Babylonians and allowed over forty-two thousand men to return to Jerusalem and rebuild the Temple that Israelites could again keep the Annual Feasts. This they did including myself and other disciples of Yeshua during our earthly lives. However, in 70 A.D., the Temple and Jerusalem was again destroyed this time by General Titus. Since that time no one on earth has been able to keep the Annual Feasts because there was no Temple. One of the things we will do when we go down to earth is rebuild the Temple,” Paul finished and paused for this to sink into Zekiel’s mind.

“I think I get what you are saying. While I was mortal, I and others could not really keep the Annual Feasts because there was no temple in Jerusalem. But, Israel kept the Passover while still in the Wilderness. In Numbers 9: 4-5 the Bible says, “*Moses told the children of Israel that they should keep the Passover. And they kept the Passover on the fourteenth day of the first month, at twilight, in the Wilderness of Sinai; according to all that [Yahweh] commanded Moses, so the children of Israel did.*”

Paul replied, “Don’t forget that the Passover is the one Annual Feast wherein we are not instructed to keep like the weekly Sabbath and not work and therefore was an exception. However, when the Temple was rebuilt, that was where the Jews kept the Feasts until it was again destroyed. Zekiel, did you ever see any Orthodox Jews gathering together to keep the Feast of Tabernacles?”

“Now, that you mention it, some Jews build little booths at their homes and kept what they called Sukkot starting five days after Yom Kippur. So, they keep the Feast of Tabernacles and other Feast Days

The End of the Beginning

throughout the year locally but not at some vacation resort like we did.”

“So, you never saw the Jews gather for these Feasts at various vacation sites away from home or locally like the groups you were familiar with. Did you not think something was wrong in what your group was doing?”

“There you got me. No, the Jews mostly kept all the Annual Feasts at their homes or in their local synagogues,” Zekiel acknowledged. “I finally see what you are saying. All those gatherings Dee and I participated in were not true to the Word of Elohim. The only place we must go to and celebrate the Annual Feasts is at the Temple in Jerusalem. Until it is built again, all we should have done is stay at home like it says in Deuteronomy 12: 21, 26. ”²¹*If the place where [Yahweh] your [Elohim] chooses to put His name is too far from you, then you may slaughter from your herd and from your flock which [Yahweh] has given you, just as I have commanded you, and you may eat within your gates as much as your heart desires.* ²⁶*Only the holy things which you have, and your vowed offerings, you shall take and go to the place which [Yahweh] chooses.”*

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 13

As Sheep Following Human Leaders

After a few moments of reflection, Zekiel expressed his frustration at his own mistake of following group traditions like others did as far as attempting to keep the Feast of Tabernacles which was not following Elohim's Word. "I guess in many ways I was like all the rest in various church groups that followed as sheep and did not really prove all truths from the Bible but accepted what others told them often replacing one tradition with another tradition. Again, I must confess that I was guilty of ignoring Elohim's spiritual intent and in many cases like all the rest ignorantly pursued the letter that we did not understand in the first place. It was not until I was totally separated from all religious organizations that I began to see, with few exceptions, the way of religious leaders and their organizations was that of gaining a following that enriched themselves with power, earthly glory, and wealth all at the expense of those that ignorantly followed them and their empty promises and twisted theology," Zekiel stated as he remembered Paul's warning to Timothy.

But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of Elohim, having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away! For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved

concerning the faith; but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was. (2 Tim 3:1-9 NKJV)

“I was not surprised as Muslim, Hindu, and other eastern religions were first to follow the Beast and False Prophet after they came out of the Catholic Church and combined with the governments in the Middle East and then Europe and then with Asia, they began to form the New World Empire. It spread to the rest of the world like ‘wildfire’. Still, it was truly mind-boggling to see as the end approached the first major Protestant groups that began to follow the Beast was the Charismatic, Pentecostal, and Evangelical churches. Rather than seeking Biblical truths, they were always looking for miracles, dreams, visions, and great signs. The Antichrist sure did perform those with a flourish. Then virtually every single large mainstream organized Christian church; Protestant, and Orthodox bought in to the lie that the Beast was Christ returned. They began to serve and worship the Beast as the False Prophet directed them,” Zekiel said with a sigh. “I guess it should not have surprised me for when people and especially organized groups take their eyes off of Yeshua Christ and Elohim’s Word they begin to head down a path away from Elohim’s truth. How sad to have witnessed the falling away. All these were centered more on ‘what can I get out of this right now’ instead of following Christ’s words, *‘It is more blessed to give than to receive.’*”

“One by one, as they all fragmented, they forsook Elohim to follow after human leaders and manmade sets of beliefs and practices based on traditions that took scripture out of context. Just as all religious denominations and sects have done since the time we apostles began to spread the true gospel of Christ. It was bad enough that the Beast power and religion was spreading like a cancer but all these smaller independent groups began to engage in open verbal

The End of the Beginning

warfare against each other. It seemed to matter not whether the church organization was supposedly Christian such as Baptist, Presbyterian, Methodist, Pentecostal, Independent, and Mormon, Jehovah's Witness, or a seventh day Sabbath-keeping church. They all reached the mindset where they thought they had all of the truth and most thought only they would make it into the Kingdom of Elohim while all the rest were doomed," Paul reflected.

Zekiel added, "All said and done all these 'Christian' church organizations were no better than other religions such as Muslim, Buddhist, and Hindu, as well as other eastern oriental and primitive religions that totally rejected Yeshua Christ as the Son of Elohim. With few exceptions, most of their ministers and members did not have a true living faith in Yeshua Christ and therefore they did not have the Spirit of Elohim. Christ foresaw such behavior and that is why He wondered aloud in Luke 18:8: *"Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?"* They falsely believed that others who did not conform to their teachings and beliefs were lost while these things made them special. Rather than truly accepting Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior that would have begun developing the true love of Elohim within them, they merely tried to have the appearance of godliness deceiving themselves and were for the most part hypocrites. Hypocrites and those who are deceived do not see themselves as they really are and that is why they are not here."

"For I say to you, that unless your righteousness exceeds the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 5:20 NKJV)

"How sad not only for them but for others who looked to them for guidance or simply to escape the horrors of the end time," Zekiel sighed and then his body shuddered. "I discovered numerous times that some of those who tried so hard to appear righteous outwardly

even demanding obedience to what they taught were the proper keeping of Elohim's laws actually became agents of Satan just as the scriptures warned us."

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness, whose end will be according to their works. (2 Corinthians 11:13-15 NKJV)

"They just could not understand that Elohim looked into the heart of individuals and their intent was as important as what they did. Only Elohim can hold a person accountable for sin and He can impute righteousness because of a person's faith even when they fail to keep certain laws He established but do so in ignorance. That truth came to you and made a difference in how you looked upon others. You did not judge or condemn them but treated others kindly and sought to teach them greater truth as they were able to understand it. You learned many very important truths that most overlooked," Paul acknowledged.

"Seems like one thing leads to another," Zekiel replied. "Once you shake free of institutional thinking and following manmade traditions that try to take the place of Elohim's laws and teachings and really start getting into understanding the truth of Elohim's Word, the door opens wide."

"Following Elohim rather than man has never been easy for humans. Thankfully you, Zekiel, were an exception to the general rule," Paul observed.

The End of the Beginning

“You know, I don’t feel any real joy that I made it while some others that I knew over the years did not,” Zekiel said with a sigh. “It is not even as important that I made it as the fact that there are those who are here now because I had just a small part in helping them. That’s what is really important.”

“That attitude is one of the most important reasons you are here,” Paul declared. “You put others and their needs ahead of your own many times. When you are willing even to lose your life in order that someone else might live then you truly have the mind of Christ.”

Another person caught Zekiel’s attention. After observing her, he had to ask, “I can’t help but notice. What is going on with that woman over there that keeps falling down on her knees crying and shaking her head?”

“Her name is Sharon and in life she knew a great deal of Biblical truth but she failed so many times by putting her efforts toward things that really did not matter. At times, you placed your very soul in jeopardy for the sake of others, sacrificing your life to serve Elohim, those He called, and others whose calling would be later. You often forsook comfortable paths and refused to betray the truths Elohim revealed to you building lasting monuments of your faith such as gold, silver, and precious stones. However, in her situation there were times when she simply was not able to put others needs ahead of her own when she should have. Her efforts were as wood, hay, and stubble, and have all been lost yet she refused to take the mark of the Beast and lost her life because she refused to deny her faith in Yeshua Christ. She has been saved by her faith even though she has virtually no other rewards. She will be here a while longer,” Paul related.

“As I stated before,” Paul continued, “Your mission on earth will involve some who survived the Tribulation. There will be some who thought they were ‘good’ enough and knew enough but never truly accepted Yeshua as Savior in faith. Others lost their faith in Christ when they were not ‘raptured’ and did not escape the tribulation in heaven. They were only interested in escaping Elohim’s wrath and never repented of their sins nor had true saving faith. You and Deejah will be a team and others including your father and mother will join your team later to complete an important part during the millennial reign of Yeshua Christ on earth.”

“That last part is really wonderful,” Zekiel exclaimed. “My parents certainly will understand how many of these people came up short and be quite helpful in setting them on the right path. Someone who has walked in your shoes is a lot easier to listen to than someone who does not have a clue of what your life has been like. I was hoping I could have time to spend with them and go over many things that happened during our lives.”

“Have you ever wondered why you were part of various churches during your life?” Paul asked.

“I always thought I was where Elohim wanted me to be. However, several times I wondered why. Especially when He showed me in a very unusual way that He wanted me in a church organization that otherwise I would not touch with a ten-foot pole as the old saying goes.”

“It was to prepare you for a greater role than most others you knew. Your years in the Baptist Church and your years in Pentecostal Churches were both to prepare you to understand the mindset of people who believe and practice doctrines those groups followed. Before those churches moved toward joining the Beast

The End of the Beginning

power because they were deceived by his wonders and miracles, you were able to warn many in those churches that they were going to lose their salvation unless they turned away from it. Many were saved because of your warning,” Paul told him.

“I had no idea that any ever responded to my pleas. Honestly, the Pentecostal Movement went beyond crazy for years leading up to the Beast coming to power.”

“There were many in Sabbath organizations as well as in Sunday churches that also joined the Beast power. You were instrumental in saving a large number in both groups. You have been in training all your life and the greatest harvest came during the Great Tribulation,” Paul added.

“I thought my education began after I left Legweak’s cult, and then became part of a church organization that was a spinoff of that cult. If it had not been that Elohim answered the three fleeces I placed before Him I would not have gone there. Met some really nice people in it and traveled a lot and spoke before a lot of people, always telling them to trust Elohim’s Word and keep the faith.”

“Legweak is where he belongs after all the wicked things he did,” Paul noted. “There was a man Peter ran into that was like him by the name of Simon Magnus. It was that Simon who had a part in beginning the Roman Catholic Church and not the Apostle Peter. That Roman Church was nearly as far from true Christianity as some obscure Far Eastern religion.”

“I know what you mean and fully agree,” Zekiel replied.

“Have you anymore questions?” Paul asked as he put his hand on Zekiel’s shoulder looking him directly in the eyes.

“Not at this time,” Zekiel said as he sighed and closed his eyes,
“I am ready.”

Chapter 14

Other Eating and Drinking Issues

Immediately after he had finished his initial training, Zekiel was again in the great room at the table he had been at before. Everyone was talking still laughing and crying. After embracing Deejah, they walked hand in hand, to where Mo and Mary were now with some of their family members. While they were no longer husband and wife in the earthly human sense, their companionship had prepared them as a team to serve Elohim for eternity. In fact, Zekiel began to notice that two-person teams seemed to be the norm for all of the missions to begin on earth. He also learned that groups of six two people teams or twelve Spirit born Sons of Elohim formed a core team that would take on many larger operations.

Zekiel stood by the table and his hand gripped Mo's hand in a handshake, as they paused and looked each other in the eye and nodded. It was a salute and acknowledgment to each other for a job well done. Zekiel still vividly remembered seeing Mo and Mary captured when they had diverted the attention of the New World Empire's search party to protect Zekiel's family and over fifty others who were hiding. If any of the rest had been captured and told all they knew after being tortured, well over a hundred others of the faithful would have been captured. Though unmercifully tortured Mo and Mary never betrayed their brothers and sisters in the faith. The scene of their beheading for refusing to take the mark of the beast still sent shivers up his spine. Mo heard what Zekiel was thinking and also began to recall the events ending in his death.

"Tell you the truth, Zekiel, "Mo testified, "Elohim's Spirit was so mighty, and powerful it kept us strong and without fear.

Somehow, Elohim even kept us from feeling hardly any of the pain of the lashes as they beat us. I was actually smiling and having to hold back laughing in their faces as they lead us to the axe man."

"You always were bigger than life and the tougher things were the less serious you seemed to be," Zekiel replied.

"Just couldn't help it," Mo continued, "all the things those clowns had was nothing compared to what we got from Elohim during our earthly life and now, wow, nothing could ever compare with this. Thank Yahweh Almighty for the faith He gave us. I knew He would be with us even in death. When I lay my head on the chopping block, I could feel our Lord right beside me. Moreover, wham when the ax fell...I don't remember feeling the axe because I felt like I was instantly shot up into the sky like a rocket. There were lights, flashes, explosions, and music like I never heard before. Then I was walking on clouds headed towards a bright light."

"Sounds like an old movie I once saw," Zekiel remarked.

"Yeah, in some ways but the movie makers could never begin to show the real thing," replied Mo.

"I'll take your word for it," Zekiel said, "I saw you two when we were all in those 'bubbles'. You guys finished the training pretty fast."

"We have had several 'earth years' to begin learning what we did not know," Mary said turning toward them, "your time on earth to study was continually interrupted by Goon Squads of the New World Empire out to capture you. By the way my new name is Marjah."

The End of the Beginning

“Oh yeah, my new name is Moel” Mo added, “Zekiel, I found out your name as one of my final questions to my guardian angel. Yeshua has given us all a new name by using a part of our old name and adding a part of His or our heavenly Father’s name. Yeshua was His name before He became flesh and blood and that was His name on earth. The Father is called Yahweh. Those are Personal names even though most people on earth were deceived to think Yeshua’s name was Jesus due to translations of Greek text. Everyone is here because of what Yeshua and the Father, Yahweh, did to get us here. We are His children and that is why our names are like theirs. Tell me about your new mission on earth?”

“After the conquest of the Beast’s army, Deejah and I will be returning to what’s left of North America to help survivors and begin to bring that area back to stability. What are you guys doing?” Zekiel inquired.

“We are being sent to the north country to bring some survivors out of captivity to Jerusalem,” Moel answered and then asked with a slight grin, “Reckon you will run into our old ‘friend’ Van where you are headed?”

“How could you guess?” Zekiel responded while rolling his eyes. “Too bad you won’t get to join that ‘party’.

They both broke out laughing and then Zekiel noticed his father reappeared at their family table. He still seemed somewhat subdued and not as joyful as most of the others. Zekiel excused himself from Moel and Marjah and went to his father’s side.

“Dad,” Zekiel consoled, “everything is going to be fine.”

“I know, I know, I just wished I had listened to what you tried to tell me a whole lot more while on earth. I just could not understand it all. You know I really miss James,” his father was saying as he thought about his brother, Zekiel’s uncle.

“Don’t worry, dear Darljah,” his wife, Zekiel’s mother who was now named Norel consoled, “he will be along in a thousand years.”

“That’s not very long,” Zekiel added.

“Yes, just like a day,” his father acknowledged feeling better. He looked about with wide eyes saying to himself, “Well, I sure am learning a lot about things I never studied but were right there in the Bible all the time. I simply took it for granted that we would all stay in heaven for all eternity. Actually, this is kind of like being in heaven right now even if this is for a short time before we return to earth.”

“It is truly like paradise to be anywhere our Lord is. Dad, no one here except our Lord got everything right while on earth. The most important thing is that you and the rest of us got the spiritual intent of the essential things right and truly accepted Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior,” Zekiel affirmed.

“One of the things that bothered me the most when I first got here was ‘where are all the babies and little children that have died?’ Why aren’t they here with us now. Even after the Apostle Paul said what he did, I was not satisfied. I asked my guardian angel about that and he showed me a great room filled with babies and small children with angels caring for them. What a sight. Now I can accept what Paul said. They will be taken to earth and given to physical people there to raise them during the reign of our Lord. They will have a chance to grow up and experience a complete life,” Darljah

The End of the Beginning

said and finally a broad smile came to his face as his thoughts considered that taking place.

Everyone at their table and other tables were feasting on the food and drink that made the fanciest and most expensive restaurants in their prime on earth seem like greasy dirty back alley slop joints. Angels appeared with new platters filled with just about every kind of meat, fish, fowl, vegetable, fruit, and dessert they had ever heard of. The ‘Ahhs’ and ‘Ohs’ and ‘Ums’ could not be contained as everyone was nearly overwhelmed by the scrumptious exquisite taste they experienced with each bite.

While he dined, Zekiel could not help but laugh as he saw in his mind’s eye what the Apostle Paul had told him about seeing a table with trays of shellfish and a platter with a pig on it and everybody going crazy. Deejah looked at him as if he was crazy until he shared his mental image with her and she too began to laugh.

“How wonderful that in spirit life we can enjoy virtually all the good things we enjoyed in the physical,” Deejah said after she had settled down drawing everyone else’s agreement, “and get this, girls, more importantly, no matter how much we eat, we won’t get FAT!” That brought a round of applause by those who had been women while human.

“So, this is what wine tastes like,” Darljah, Zekiel’s father stated after he took a very small careful sip from the crystal glass by his plate.

“Well, in truth I never tasted any wine on earth that was ever this good,” Zekiel explained and then took a large swallow of wine from his crystal glass.

“All my life, earthly life that is, I thought all use of any form of alcohol as a beverage was a sin. I really had a good discussion about that with the Apostle Peter. Guess I even got a bit hot under the collar until he plainly showed me the truth in Elohim’s Word. Finally, he took me back in time where I actually saw our Lord drinking wine with nearly a dozen publicans at a feast. There was no doubt what they were drinking was not pure unadulterated grape juice like I had been raised to believe by older ministers in my church. In fact, a man sitting down the table from our Lord fell out of his chair and had to be carried from the hall totally passed out from drinking too much of that wine. Our Lord set a perfect example of drinking the wine in moderation, which several others around the table began to copy.

“I can now clearly see that it was the abuse and excessive misuse of alcoholic beverages that Elohim’s Word truly condemned. In fact, abstinence from alcoholic drinks except for a very few abnormal health reasons is practically condemned by Elohim’s Word. Drinking moderately is very good for the digestive systems as well as its calming effect for those who get nervous and helps many relax and enjoy interacting with others at special events such as marriage feasts. The words of Paul and the example of Yeshua Christ should have rung some bells in my head during my life that I was wrong about the whole subject. How stupid of me to think I was more righteous than Yeshua was by not drinking any alcoholic beverage. I should have followed His example in everything even if it did break church traditions I had learned as I grew up¹². How awful that I actually ran some good people away from several of my congregations because of my ignorance on this subject,” Darljah elaborated.

“Sounds like you have now become an expert on this subject,” Zekiel noted.

The End of the Beginning

“Guess when you learn you have been wrong about something and then get it straight you want to talk about it with others,” Darljah continued. “Actually, this is just part of an overall truth that I am beginning to understand. One of the greatest errors my church taught was that certain things were a sin to do. Such as, playing cards, or dancing, or going to movies. I even thought it was a sin for women to have short hair or wear pants. Peter and I went round and round till I finally realized it was what and why and how things were used not the things themselves that could result in sinful activities,” Darljah admitted. Then looking at the food that was piled high on platters before him he just laughed and said, “Well, well, I don’t guess there is any ham or lobster tails hiding anywhere.”

“Did the subject of proper meats for food create any problems in your discussions with Peter?” Zekiel asked.

“No, just like the bit about alcohol after he showed me plainly that Elohim’s Word had a lot of things to say about the food we eat,” Zekiel’s father answered. “Actually, observing what our Lord ate during His life again was the clincher. I learned that at certain times some meats were forbidden because of health issues and to separate His people from other nations who would lead them astray while some restrictions were simply tests of obedience. In later times, this subject was not an essential truth or matter Elohim was concerned about His followers becoming overly involved with keeping. Still, there are some guidelines that Elohim wants those who would be His people to follow. It seems so ironic that our churches taught so strongly against some things that was not bad in themselves and yet allowed other things that were not all that good for mankind.”

“I fully understand what you are saying. I learned from experience and the writings of Paul. During the end time this helped guide many of us in surviving that food and drink were not an issue

with Elohim. At that time, it was more important how such things affected the faith of others. Even though Elohim's Word in the Old Testament technically tells us that some meats should not be eaten, this was not included in the New Covenant and in faith we were able to eat whatever we could find to nourish our bodies. What we find at these tables before us at this great feast is consistent with the teaching of clean meats in the Old Covenant. This has been done for the sake of all those who are here who lived by the Old Covenant clean meats teachings. Yahweh did not want to expose what those who learned to live by the New Covenant and cause the others any concerns about unclean meats at this great feast. After all, all the clean meats are very tasty for everyone," Zekiel remembered.

I know and am convinced by the Lord Yeshua that there is nothing unclean of itself; but to him who considers anything to be unclean, to him it is unclean. Yet if your brother is grieved because of your food, you are no longer walking in love. Do not destroy with your food the one for whom Christ died. Therefore do not let your good be spoken of as evil; for the kingdom of Elohim is not eating and drinking, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit. For he who serves Christ in these things is acceptable to Elohim and approved by men. Therefore let us pursue the things which make for peace and the things by which one may edify another. Do not destroy the work of Elohim for the sake of food. All things indeed are pure, but it is evil for the man who eats with offense. It is good neither to eat meat nor drink wine nor do anything by which your brother stumbles or is offended or is made weak. Do you have faith? Have it to yourself before Elohim. Happy is he who does not condemn himself in what he approves. But he who doubts is condemned if he eats, because he does not eat from faith; for whatever is not from faith is sin. (Romans 14:14-23 NKJV)

The End of the Beginning

After a brief moment of reflection Zekiel asked his father, “What are you and Mom going to be doing when we get back to earth?”

“We will be helping the angels find homes for all the infants and then we will be going back to North America to work with you to reach people who have survived but who did not make into the Kingdom. Practically all of those who survived were basically good people who were fortunate in being close friends or family members of true saints of Elohim who are here with us and were sheltered by Elohim’s hand as He protected His own. I am looking forward to the second resurrection and dealing with a number of people who were supposedly godly men and women but who sowed strife and discord and broke up many small church groups with their petty and selfish interests,” Darljah answered. “Their behavior quenched the Spirit eventually destroying what little good they had in themselves. I was able to find out that Elohim simply was not calling most of these people and their minds were blinded so they could not be saved. I think I understand and will be able to work with them and help lead them toward salvation when it will be their time to be called.”

“Most people never understood that Elohim had an order in which He was calling people to salvation but above all, His Plan was to save everyone if possible, even though during sometimes some of them were blinded and could not understand or accept the truth,” Zekiel recalled the scriptures.

²⁰But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept. ²¹For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. ²²For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. ²³But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward

they that are Christ's at his coming. (1 Corinthians 15:20 - 23 KJV)

²⁵For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. ²⁶And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: ²⁷For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins. (Romans 11:25 - 27 KJV)

“We have both walked in those shoes as I have learned about your experiences before Christ returned,” Then Darljah’s face lit up with a broad grin, “Can’t wait to make a little side trip to see those wonderful grandchildren of ours I have been told about,”

“They are anxious to see you as well,” Zekiel said. “We have spent many hours telling them all about you and Mom and they want to see their ‘Grandeess’ as Angie calls you both.”

Part Three: Final Preparation

Chapter 15

Learning about Time

While Zekiel and Deejah were at the Wedding Supper of the Lamb, back on earth...

“Before his transformation into spirit,” Dabarel was explaining to Angie, “I was your Daddy’s guardian angel.”

“You were?” Angie questioned with surprise.

“Yes, and I was assigned as yours and Kenny’s guardian angel from the time you were conceived before you were born,” he acknowledged.

“How can you guard all of us at the same time? I remember one-time Kenny was with Mommy while she was cleaning the cabin and I was far away with Daddy fishing on the riverbank. How could you be at both places at the same time?”

“Just like when your Daddy was here. Actually, even before he was born, I was busy watching over many people for several thousand years. But, since your Daddy came on the scene, he needed extra help as his life was often placed in jeopardy so he got a lot of my attention,” Dabarel continued as he noted her forehead wrinkle in deep thought and her eyes showed she was really puzzled. “You need to begin to understand that a spirit being like myself can seem to be in several places at the same time, at least time as mortals experience time here on earth. You see, the spirit realm exists outside of time itself. Do you remember your Dad or Mom ever reading a scripture to you that said something like *“a day with the Lord is as a thousand years and...”*?”

“And, and, *a thousand years is as a day!*”¹³ she finished.

“Yes, that’s the one,” he said, “it is good that you listened to them as they talked about things of the Bible.”

“But that never made any sense to me,” she replied even more puzzled.

“Well, it is a very difficult concept for any mortal to really understand. Think about it like this, in the spirit world we live in the light with and of Elohim,” he began explaining. “In the study of science there was a theory about how fast light travels. A brilliant scientist once theorized that as one travels closer to the speed of light that time would slow down and if their speed exceeded the speed of light time would even back up and then he would actually be in the past...”

“Oh yes I remember his name was... uh... something Stein ... uh... yes ... I think it was **Frankenstein!**” she cried out excitedly.

“That is close,” he continued suppressing a laugh. “His name was actually Albert Einstein. Well, I know this is complicated to one so young in fact just about anyone, but let me try to explain it this way. Each hour is divided into what?”

“Each hour has sixty minutes,” she answered quickly.

“That’s right, good. Now, can you divide a minute?” he asked.

“Yes, there are sixty seconds in each minute.”

“Can you divide a second?”

The End of the Beginning

“My Daddy had been a Kentucky Wildcat Basketball fan before the Tribulation began. He told me about a big important basketball game they had with the Duke Blue Devils once that had one point six seconds left and Duke had the ball out of bounds. A Duke player threw the ball way down to the other end of the basketball court and his teammate caught it, spun, and took a long shot and hit the basket and won the game,” she said excitedly, “My Daddy always got very upset when he thought about that game because he was rooting for the Wildcats and they lost the game on that play.”

“Yes, exactly, a second can be divided into tenths and even further. Do you remember your Mom or Dad using a computer?” he asked and Angie shook her head yes, “A computer does its work at a speed... let’s see how to explain. See all those stars shining in the sky,” he asked as he pointed toward the sky.

“Yes, there are zillions.”

“Yes, and some computers did ‘zillions of things every second,’” he continued, “but, all you see are the images on the screen and hear the sounds that happen at the same speed you see and hear. But what you don’t see is happening so fast you could not see it if you wanted to.”

“And you can do a zillion things a second and I can only see what you are doing in a few of those zillions of a second and not the other things?” she said with her eye squinted together as if to help her mind understand.

“That is pretty close to what happens,” he said nodding his head in agreement.

“So, right now, even as we are talking, part of the time, as far as the spirit world is concerned, you are not actually here but someplace else, huh?” she asked.

“That about sums it up. For you and your brother, in your time and frame of reference, I will always be here even when you do not see me. Nothing will happen without my knowledge. There will be times when I will help you or keep something bad from happening to you. However, there will be times when I let things happen so you will learn lessons to be careful and responsible to take care of yourselves and others. You will not be children long but even when you grow up, and after your change comes, I will always be with you,” Dabarel assured her.

“How do you keep track of what you are doing with whomever at any given point in time, our time that is?” she asked still a little confused.

“Honey, that is the easy part because each one of you that I am responsible for are so wonderfully unique and special. Just like every star out there. They all look much the same from here but up close and inside they are all very different.”

“You have been inside a star?”

“Several of them actually,” he explained, “when the Creator Elohim began planning the universe I was working in His model on...see, no you can’t but...over in that direction,” he said pointing toward the sky near the horizon, “if you could see far enough you could see a star way over there. It has six planets circling it. I thought at first, we might put that system around the earth in the fourth slot circling its sun and use it to begin creating physical life forms. But the Master decided to use this solar system with eight

The End of the Beginning

other planets to put around the earth as it became the fourth planet from the sun.”

“One day I would like to see that star and its six planets,” Angie said.

“Elohim willing one day you shall,” Dabarel replied.

“Will that be in spirit time or human time?”

“We will just have to wait and see.”

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 16

The Wedding Supper Ends

The celebration had continued for what would have felt like days during their earthly lives yet only fractions of a second had actually passed by on earth. There were reunions of families and friends some having been in ‘Abraham’s bosom’ while some had still been on earth until the Lord’s return. So many people whose lives had been chronicled in the Bible were asked many questions about things that were not fully explained in the written text. Everyone was fully assured that they would have all the time they desired to pursue such interest as eternity continued unending. The final primer to educate the new Sons of Elohim in preparation for their tasks on earth came as a booming voice rang out that hushed the multitude,

“Ye servants of the Living Elohim will now begin to learn great truths of events that happened long before you were created. From time to time, you will be called back from your earthly duties to gain additional knowledge of the past. In earth time this will happen in just a fraction of a second but while you now live in the light you will have all the time you need to consider the events that have transpired so you can further understand the greatness of our Elohim and His great plan for mankind.”

At that time above the crowd a vast array of lights, clouds, and smoke appeared. All stood and gazed in expectation. Around them the chairs and tables with all the settings vanished. Slowly it seemed the holographic-like images began to clear and encompass them and each one felt like they were invisible and had a panoramic view of the scenes from every angle before them. It was just as if they were

actually there, unseen in scenes that took place in the third heaven before the universe existed and before time began. They were in awe as they witnessed the creation of universe, the rebellion of Satan, and the beginning of the history of man.

[The things they saw and heard are presented in the first book of this three-book series: *The Beginning of the Beginning*.]

While the multitude finished their preparation, Yeshua was able to spend time with the Father, Yahweh in the third heaven.

“One question was asked by many to me,” Yeshua began, “Especially, as they began to fully learn how very close We are and trying to combine that with what they had read in the Bible they asked, Why did I not know the day and the hour of My return as You only knew it?”

“You did not know simply because I chose to not know Myself,” YAHWEH answered. “However, there were conditions I was looking for that would determine when it was the right time for Your return. Several times after You ascended back here from earth, I almost allowed things to complete prophecy but then I stopped them and decided to wait a while longer.”

“What were You waiting for?” Yeshua asked.

“I wanted to see every form of government that man could conceive run its course to show mankind that without Us guiding his path he could attain no nation that would have lasting peace and prosperity,” YAHWEH elaborated. “It may surprise You but I was amazed as I watched the beginning of that nation in the northern part of the western hemisphere on earth. No nation

The End of the Beginning

including Ancient Israel in the history of mankind was founded on such godly principles as this nation. The leaders sincerely prayed to Us for guidance in every aspect of their efforts to gain independence and to govern their people. Their devotion to me was the greatest I had ever seen of any governing body on earth even surpassing Israel under King David. The rule of law founded in their constitution and amendments was by far the most spiritually and physically correct guidelines of any nation since time began.

“No, they were not perfect and typical of mortal man they made many mistakes. One of their greatest was to allow slavery to exist within their borders. Still, many people from areas of the earth that faced continual war, starvation, and disease were brought to that new nation and later their children enjoyed a life of blessings. Those not captured and taken away to that nation faced even greater hardships than even the worst treatment that those taken in slavery had to face as they lived out their lives in the continent called Africa. I watched this young nation closely and for nearly two hundred years their founding laws were basically followed and they prospered with Our blessings for their godly behavior and their sharing of these blessings with other people around the entire world. Just as we promised our friend, Abraham, all the nations on earth were blessed through his progeny even though this nation did not even know that a great percentage of them actually came from Jacob’s grandson, Ephraim.”

“Some historians and Biblical scholars thought this nation was founded by the descendants of Manasseh. How could they miss the signs given by Jacob that in the end time; Ephraim would be a ‘multitude of nations?’ The United States of America like no other nation ever to exist was eventually composed of fifty unique states each of which were larger in size, population, and wealth than what was considered nations in other parts of the world. How could

supposed scholars miss the word 'Great' in the prophecy describing Manasseh and who had to come before Ephraim as he was the elder brother? These facts clearly singled out Manasseh's descendants who became 'Great Britain.'. Like Manasseh, England became great yet its commonwealth nations were ruled by them to take advantage of their resources while the people of those nations were generally never allowed to become a part of their society. On the other hand, like Ephraim in the nation of Israel who followed Moses, the United States was a true melting pot of many peoples who were all citizens and all joined together forming individual states like nations and then solidly united as one unique single nation. No other two nations in all of history came close to fulfilling Jacob's prophetic words for his son Joseph's two sons," Yeshua concluded.

"I remember intervening during that bloody civil war to finally end slavery. It was by Our hands that another great and devote man named Abraham became the leader of the nation just before that critical time. There were so many that were out to kill him before he accomplished his mission in life but We protected his life until he had finished his calling. After a few hundred years as We allow humans more opportunities to again be part of governing countries throughout the whole world during your reign, Yeshua, I want us to use much of that kind of system with direct oversight by our new Sons. Also, this time there will be no ungodly, immoral, and self-seeking Supreme Court judges like those in 1947 and 1962 and afterwards to corrupt, twist and misinterpret those wonderful fundamental laws of their constitution and first ten amendments that restricted the government from taking advantage of its citizens or abusing them.

"We will also use term limits for all positions and forbid professional politicians from ever holding office as was prevalent in the years just before the tribulation began. We will prevent

The End of the Beginning

leaders from trying to void the guidelines of the constitution or allow the government to get involved in the economy or social programs aimed at stealing from the rich to give to the poor. What a tragedy as we watched the leaders in the final years of that great country passing legislation heaping benefits and salaries on themselves to the extent, they became an elite group much like the royalty of Europe in its heyday. One thing for sure, we will forever abandon the manmade custom of royalty wherein the children of the nobility continue to rule simply because of their birth. Rulers will come from those who prove themselves capable and worthy regardless of their parentage, economic level, or profession.”

“I too watched the United States of America from its founding and its terrible demise. What a shame that in the end their leaders set themselves up with special privileges, excessive pay and benefits such as health and retirement plans that were not available to average citizens who still had the burden of paying for them,” Yeshua recalled. *“At one point they actually had a fairly good retirement plan for the average citizen but destroyed it by mismanaging its fund. It was established strictly for the retirement of aged workers whose contribution was added to a matched amount by the companies they worked for during their working career. However, the government began using the fund for things it was never intended such as welfare payments to those who had never contributed to it. They robbed from this fund money that was needed for future generations and used this stolen money for other programs until they bankrupted it and left older people nothing but unfulfilled promises. If these leaders had had to rely on retirement and health plans the same as the average citizen perhaps, they would not have so readily misused the funds as they did for other things.”*

“When the population began electing candidates who continually lied while their past and present behavior proved these

candidates could not be trusted and then not only elected them but allowed them to continue in office with a second and even more terms, I knew that country would finally collapse,” YAHWEH stated. “I was tempted to send fire and brimstone to turn that evil leader who had the ignorant audacity to declare ‘America is not a Christian nation’ into a pile of ashes right before the cameras so the whole world would know not to flaunt their wickedness.”

“It was unbelievable that the people of that country did not rise up and demand that he be impeached. Perhaps the greater tragedy was that man was not born a citizen of the nation and therefore was not qualified according to the constitution to hold the office of the President. Years before, the Supreme Court ruled that for a person to be considered a ‘natural born citizen’ both biological parents must be citizens so that miserable liar should have never been allowed to run for the office in the first place. Satan used every trick in the book to deceive the nation and get him elected. That was the beginning of the end as the majority of the citizens of that great country allowed their government leadership to push ungodly socialist and communist agendas. That godless leader also opened wide the door for that evil godless religion of Islam to flourish while prohibiting the free expression of Christian beliefs. Unbelievable that the practice of reading the Bible or prayers in public schools which was encouraged by the founding fathers to keep the nation faithful to Elohim was banned by the ungodly Supreme Court,” Yeshua replied. Then with a sigh continued, “Sadly, the country slowly followed the degenerating morals in leadership rather than stand up and demand a return to Christian values like the founding father had warned them to maintain or face destruction.”

“I’ll tell you who should have been impeached,” YAHWEH fumed. “Those judges on the Supreme Court and other courts that actually ignored constitutional laws and precedents established by

The End of the Beginning

the founding fathers and earlier more godly judges. They actually began to create laws by their edicts in misinterpreting laws to break down the moral fiber of the people. They encouraged and rewarded ungodliness such as pornography and homosexuality rather than maintaining practices that are wholesome and beneficial to all. Those stupid self-serving judges did not realize that in order to teach a people good and true moral principle you must do so by teaching true Christian principles defined in the Bible.”

“The nation took a real turn for the worse,” Yeshua remembered, “When the modern courts virtually threw out the first amendment of the constitution and created a ‘law’ they called ‘separation of church and state’ which simply did not exist in any congressional or judicial language implied or otherwise noted in any precedent for nearly two hundred years. In fact, the founding fathers and all three branches of government insisted on maintaining Christian teachings and morality based on biblical principles, which is the exact opposite from what those ungodly and evil judges declared by their unconstitutional rulings. Before that ridiculous ruling in 1947 and the one in 1962 it was expected and demanded by governmental leaders that public schools and all governmental activities be grounded in Christian religious practices and encouraged the population to vote into office only good Christian leaders to fill all government offices. In the end, it was every man for himself. Even when the country was finally attacked from its enemies from without, enemies within were already in control of too many facilities to stop the destruction of the national government. Even the strong independent states eventually crumbled. The Saints who survived in remote areas needed our protection or they would have perished.”

“Well, our Saints will be the rulers and judges for all governments and peoples on earth and it will be hundreds of years before any mortal rules and then only with the close guidance of the Saints in every aspect so they will prosper from Our blessings,” YAHWEH responded as He and Yeshua both breathed a sigh of relief that the evils of the past would soon be over if only for one thousand years.

“I have a feeling that when mortals again take leadership roles and rule kingdoms that they will make mistakes and go against Our way again,” Yeshua speculated.

“Then we will have to get their attention and the attention of the people that such brings punishment while obedience brings blessings,” YAHWEH advised.

“Nothing like a famine or fire and brimstone to get mortals attention,” Yeshua concluded.

Part Four:

The King of Kings Returns

Chapter 17

The Return of the King of Kings

Yeshua again placed His whole being and attention to the events about to begin. Instantly, He was again at the Wedding Supper of the Lamb. He stood in the center and all eyes looked upon Him. Suddenly His robe changed to a shining gold and white suit of armor and He was seated upon a great white horse in full battle regalia. Instantly all the Saints found themselves likewise dressed and seated on white horses in full battle regalia like the knights of past ages. The winged angelic band took their place above and about the Saints in battle formation. Most of the Saints knew their leader by name as Yeshua Christ while most of the angels knew Him as Yeshua but all knew Him as Elohim. His hand took the hilt of His sword and with a sweeping motion; He drew it out to begin to fulfill Biblical prophecies of old.

*In that day, his feet shall stand on the Mount of Olives...
(Zechariah 14:4, NKJV)*

And have made us kings and priests to our Elohim; And we shall reign on the earth.” (Revelation 5:10 NKJV)

“Servants of the Great Elohim Almighty Yahweh!” Yeshua proclaimed as He waved the sword above His head. “It is time for us to begin our work. The inhabitants of Earth await us. The Serpent must be chained. The Beast and False Prophet will now be judged. You have all been given your assignments as kings, priests, and eternal servants of Elohim Almighty. It is time for the Kingdom of Elohim to rule the earth!”

A trumpet sounded followed by a great shout from all who had been at the marriage supper of the Lamb. The great white light in the sky began to expand until its brilliance blocked out that of the sun, moon, and stars surrounding the entire earth. Then the armies of heaven began to descend upon the planet. This mighty sound had shaken the entire earth causing mountains to crumble and the seas to rise and crash against the shores. Descending in a light that looked as a burning white-hot fire to the horrified inhabitants of earth, they saw the great multitude dressed in shining armor with white capes swirling behind them charging downward riding on what appeared like horses all with their swords drawn and ready for battle.

The armies of heaven could see below them a place called Armageddon where a vast army two hundred million strong had drawn near to attack Jerusalem. This was the last large stronghold of those who were not in captivity and had not taken the mark of the Beast. These had staged a revolt against the Beast power and with Elohim's help miraculously drove its adherents and military out of the ancient city. The surging army of millions was being led by the Beast and False Prophet and Satan and his demons openly manifested themselves where all could see them walking among them. Other demons flew in the air circled above shrieking curses against Elohim and encouraging the army to attack and utterly destroy everyone who did not worship the Beast. They arrogantly thought themselves invincible.

When they heard the trumpet and the shout from above and felt the earth reel beneath their feet the mortal throng had little time to do anything but look around and then upward. Suddenly they saw that they were surrounded by what looked like warriors upon white horses in full battle regalia all having flaming swords poised for attack. The armies of heaven swept down on the mass of two hundred million and began to hack them to pieces with their swords.

The End of the Beginning

The mortal's weapons flailed about striking nothing but thin air passing through the Armies of Heaven with no effect. From the walls of the city and from hilltops those who were not far from this battle saw a scene that they could hardly comprehend. It looked like fire and brimstone had fallen upon the huge army but they could also see within the flames and smoke what looked like knights in shining gold and white armor on large white horses sweeping across the evil horde as they cut them down. Where the horses of the Heavenly Army touched the ground, they could see blood from those killed flowing up to the bridles of the horses. As the last mortals were slain, the demons were captured by the angels and Saints and shackled so they could not move.

Satan had been out in front directly followed by the Beast and False Prophet. As they led the army, they were so intent on the destruction of Jerusalem that they did not even look up at the sound or look back to see the destruction that was taking place on their army. Suddenly, Gabriel grabbed the back of the armor worn by the Beast in one hand and the back of the robe worn by the False Prophet in the other hand yanking them off their horses and began carrying them above the battle toward Christ. At the same time, Michael swept down and caught hold of a surprised Satan instantly latching a great chain about his neck and jerking him upwards from the ground.

“What...you, Michael, you can't do that. It's not time! It's not time! I was promised more time!” screamed Satan as he turned and saw who held the end of the chain.

“Your time is up for now Evil One,” Michael announced as he pulled back on the chain.

Satan struggled jerking from side to side trying to break the chain about his neck and then tried to pull away from Michael.

“How is it possible for you to hold me?” Satan snarled, “You’ve never been able to stand against my great strength by yourself. Where is the Christ hiding? Only he can try to match me.”

“It is time for you to begin seeing a great difference between us,” Michael explained as he snapped the chain and pulled Satan toward him. He held the dragon of old close to his face and said, “I have continued to grow in power as Elohim has rewarded my faithful loyalty to Him while you have continued to fall deeper into your evil ways and have become weaker as you have drawn ever further from Elohim. Now even a human being who has the power of the Holy Spirit can withstand even you if you had the courage to notice.”

“No, I am the prince, the god of the earth. No one and nothing can withstand my mighty power,” screeched Satan.

Michael ignored the ranting of Satan as he continued to wrap the chain about him with loops to bind his arms. Satan gasped as he saw other angels swooping up behind them carrying the rest of the demons who also had been shackled with chains. Below them, they could see the valley of Armageddon was nearly covered by carrion birds feasting on the broken and charred flesh of the destroyed army. Satan and his demons were held prisoner while a final judgment was taking place for the two most evil humans who ever lived.

Only two human beings had been spared the initial destruction as the host of heaven had swept down upon the army of the Beast. These two were in Gabriel’s grasp as he flew towards the King. Moses flew over to him and took the Beast from one of Gabriel’s hands while Elijah took the False Prophet from the other hand and

The End of the Beginning

they carried them to judgment. King Yeshua rode His horse to a level place just beyond the battle site and pulled up the reigns of his horse to stop. From His saddle, He looked down upon the two. The rest of the heavenly host surrounded this scene as the battle was now over. The two struggled to free themselves from the grip of their captors.

“Ha!” the Beast laughed still intoxicated by the power he had felt leading so great a multitude into battle, “see how many of your precious children have followed me?”

“Yes,” exclaimed the False Prophet with his eyes fastened on the Beast still expecting Satan to rescue them, “just a little more time and we would have had the whole world bowing to our master.”

“What do you think of your master now?” Elijah chided them and pointed to where Michael held the chain-bound Satan, “Consider well his fate for you both shall soon follow him.”

The valley had now become a blazing inferno as all the weapons of war burned, it was called Gehenna fire. Michael flew with the fallen great archangel toward its center as a hole opened in its midst like a whirlpool. It was a black hole that opened a portal into another dimension. Beyond its opening lay a vast wasteland without any light, an utterly empty void of a pit awaited its prisoners. Satan screamed and thrashed about shrieking ungodly curses as Michael cast him chains and all into the pit¹⁴. The other angels then threw the other demons that had followed Satan also into the pit that whirled about with fire, smoke, and brimstone that seemed to close back up as it swallowed the demonic horde and again became a solid horrendous lake of fire.

To the Beast and False Prophet, Yeshua declared, *“You have committed unspeakable evil fully conscious of your acts against Elohim and mankind. Like your master, Satan, you would not repent even if given all eternity. You have freely chosen this evil and therefore you are damned for all eternity and you will suffer for your horrible crimes against mankind and your evil sins.”*

"Ha," laughed the Beast again, "our bodies will be disintegrated by the fire and we will not suffer long."

"Not so," Yeshua explained to them, *"like the souls of lost incorrigible men who have died since time began your souls will be bodied in a form that will not completely perish but will suffer unimaginable pain and horror that will seem to last for an eternity until your final judgment and the total destruction of your body and soul."*

Down to the surface of the fiery inferno where Satan had been cast Michael now hovered holding the Beast he had taken from Moses. Beside him was Gabriel who had taken the False Prophet from Elijah. Together they slowly began to descend toward the flaming surface of the lake of fire that looked like white-hot molten lava¹⁵.

The Beast turned to the False Prophet and uttered curses as he shouted, "You said we would die and cease to live not suffer in the afterlife. Was that a lie you had us believe?"

"It does not matter, my lord. Even if we have a soul we will live on and relish the pain and suffering of all those who have rejected Elohim. As the fires burn our pain will fuel our hatred for Elohim and all He stands for. We will curse the Christ for all eternity. Our voices will be heard laughing at Elohim along with all

The End of the Beginning

those who have followed our master Satan,” the False Prophet shrieked and laughed demonically.

Then the Beast and False Prophet both began to scream in pain and anguish as their feet came nearer to the burning fire.

“So, you still think you will have the last laugh? Now, you will learn and fully understand the truth. As the fire consumes your mortal bodies, your soul will have a new body. You have no idea how greatly you will suffer. No, there will be no laughter or even thoughts about others. You will be conscious only of bitter horrific pain you are suffering and the only sounds you make and hear will be your own shrieks of total agony,” Michael told the Beast and False Prophet.

“No, that can’t be. Didn’t some of Elohim’s people believe the soul of man was mortal,” the False Prophet cried out in desperation. “That must mean when we perish our minds will cease just like our mortal bodies.”

“Yes, even some of Elohim’s elect did not fully understand all the truths of Elohim. However, know this truth. Of those who followed Satan, only the fallen angels have been immortal and yes, they too will suffer for what seems like an eternity. However, Almighty Elohim can destroy even these demonic beings if He so chooses. However, the final fate of lost humanity has been decided. While to them it will seem like an eternity, there will finally come a point beyond eternity when there will be a final judgment for those who are incorrigible. Even as a human would not allow a mad rabid dog to suffer but would put it out of its misery, so Elohim in His compassion and mercy will eventually not allow anyone to suffer in mindless pain and agony forever in eternity, even miserable evil wretches like you and all others who have rejected Elohim and have

followed Satan. Truly, death as written in Elohim's Word means exactly what it says, the complete cessation of life in any form. Yes, the soul is mortal and can be destroyed by Almighty Elohim along with any kind of body He has given to humanity as the Christ warned in Elohim's Holy Scriptures in Matthew 10: 28. The gift of Elohim is eternal life wherein the human spirit combined with the Holy Spirit is given to those who have accepted Yeshua Christ as Lord, Savior, and Master and these have now been given glorified spirit bodies to live for all eternity. You and others like you shall eventually become mere ashes to be trodden under foot. Gone, and soon forgotten," Gabriel somberly told them as he and Michael continued to lower their captives into the fire.

The flesh, bones, and tissues of their bodies singed and chard, and their features looked like they were literally melting as they were very slowly lowered into the fire. It was a scene much like that depicted of several of the Nazis after they had opened the Ark of the Covenant in the movie "Raiders of the Lost Ark." No longer could they speak words as they screamed and wailed in absolute agony until finally their eyeballs exploded, the hair on their head ignited in flame, and then their lungs exploded before their entire bodies were totally consumed by Gehenna fire. Their souls were now in a place of unimaginable horror. Unquenchable fire provided the only light but none could see any others as they felt the unending and most intense pain possibly imaginable. Most of the time they could not even shriek in agony as their tongues stuck to the roof of their mouths. They tried to cry out for just a drop of water to free their swollen tongues. The pit of Hell was in another dimension beyond a black hole. It was an otherwise empty void that very few outside of its confines could peer into it. Of the mass of people that had come against Jerusalem, none remained alive. They had willingly rejected the only hope humanity had to take hold of eternal life and thereby they received eternal damnation. While their souls were sent

The End of the Beginning

to hell fire, only ashes remained of their mortal bodies already being stepped upon by the saints of Elohim as they walked about the remains of those who had gathered before Jerusalem.

Those who had been baptized with the Holy Spirit in life had finally witnessed the baptism of fire that had been long ago prophesied by John the Baptist. Some who were Charismatic or Pentecostal thought being baptized with fire was a great anointing of the Holy Spirit in which a person speaks in tongues. The truth was that mankind would be baptized by the Holy Spirit when they received Christ as Lord, Savior, and Master. Those who did not receive the Holy Spirit of Elohim would eventually be baptized by Gehenna fire in hell.

John answered, saying to all, "I indeed baptize you with water; but One mightier than I is coming, whose sandal strap I am not worthy to loosen. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. 'His winnowing fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clean out His threshing floor, and gather the wheat into His barn; but the chaff He will burn with unquenchable fire.'" (Luke 3:16, 17 NKJV)

Yeshua rode His horse to the top of the Mount of Olives and dismounted His horse. As His feet touched the ground on the Mount of Olives, the earth beneath his feet split apart and a great river began to flow, outward east and west as He remained there standing upon the waters. Immediately, the Saints and angels, which had accompanied Him, spread out in all directions about Jerusalem. As the earth continued to shake, smoke surrounded the remaining inhabitants of Jerusalem that had survived. Then they began to see many strange things happening. It seemed like buildings were appearing out of thin air. On the Mount, a great new Temple now appeared which was full of smoke and a fire. A bright light emitted

from the open doors of the Temple that could be clearly seen even in broad daylight. A Great Hall and other buildings like palaces also suddenly appeared about the city. What they could not see were spirit beings; transformed Saints and angels, working together to construct the buildings at the speed of light in which time as mankind knew it nearly stood still.

Some of the buildings ascended for a thousand stories above ground level with tops so far up mortal eyes could not see the top floor. In some of these the infants and small children physically resurrected to mortal flesh at Christ's return were housed until the time they would be placed with mortal couples so they could grow up and have a normal life. In addition, there were all the human beings who had been born since Adam with defective brains. These like the infants and unborn fetuses had died truly innocent of sin. They would now have a normal brain in a resurrected body that was like a two-year-old and would live a normal life for hundreds of years. During this time, they would now have their first chance to learn of Elohim's way and gain salvation through faith in Yeshua Christ.

With the first task on earth completed, the Saints of Elohim began dispersing to the far corners of the earth to begin their separate missions. Zekiel said his farewell to family and friends. Lastly, he had to say a temporary farewell to Moel. Then they as many others did with a partner many of which had been their spouses in mortal life flew at a speed near the speed of light to their assignments.

And they sang a new song, saying: "You are worthy to take the scroll, And to open its seals; For You were slain, And have redeemed us to Elohim by Your blood Out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, And have made us kings and

The End of the Beginning

priests to our Elohim; And we shall reign on the earth.”
(Revelation 5:9, 10 NKJV)

Chapter 18

The Missions of the Saints Begin

It seemed like a grand reunion for the kids even though it had only been a few minutes for the children. They had never been away from both parents at the same time in their short lives before. While Deejah held them both in her arms only she noticed that very briefly, Zekiel had flickered ever so slightly and she knew he had been gone in Spirit time and had been sizing up what they would be doing as soon as it was light. The grandparent's appearing followed this and the children took to them as though they had been around all their lives. After a short visit, that lasted several hours into the night, they had to leave but promised to return soon for an extended visit. As soon as they had the children bedded down, Zekiel sat down by the fire with Carl.

“Well,” Zekiel smiled and began talking, “what do you think about all this?”

“Elohim help me, Zeke, I mean Zekiel,” he replied with great sincerity, “I’ll never doubt you again. What’s to become of me anyway?”

“That’s okay, Carl, you can call me whatever you wish. Deejah and I have much work to do,” Zekiel replied, “I was hoping you would continue to help us.”

“Sure, anything you need,” Carl responded.

“We would like for you to continue to teach our children as you have done these past few years along with some other children that we will be gathering. Your grasp of English, math, and the sciences

is superb and they really like the way you make everything so interesting. Deejah and I will be also be teaching them as well as the adults we gather but we will focus more on spiritual lessons,” Zekiel explained.

“That’s kind of you to say so,” Carl said. “You and Dee are certainly not lacking in those general educational subjects and it’s very thoughtful of you to want me to help.”

“Also, there are some other tasks that we have to do that you would be a big help in assisting us. We will be gathering individual survivors scattered over several thousand square miles. They have so much to learn of spiritual truths. I would appreciate it if you would also take part in the sessions and interact with them to help us determine if they truly understand what we teach them,” Zekiel concluded. He was now able to hear the thoughts of others but decided that having Carl participate would greatly increase his understanding and acceptance of Elohim’s truth and way.

“As I said, I would be glad to help in any way possible,” Carl replied. “I owe my life to you. If you had not insisted and virtually made me come with you, I would have died a long time ago. I never could stomach all the hype everyone was making over that false ‘messiah’ and I would have surely opened my mouth one too many times and, chop, there goes my head into the basket. Well, to be truthful I must admit I also never did really listen close enough to what you taught others during the last few years. I have a lot of learning to do myself as well. Hope I can become just like you.”

“You will do fine,” Zekiel said, “and, please do not use me as a standard especially how I was before our Lord returned. We all must use Yeshua Christ as our standard. He went through it all, did it all,

The End of the Beginning

and was perfect in every way even though He was human just like we were. Something no one else has ever accomplished.”

“Hi, guys,” Deejah, said as she suddenly appeared beside them.

“Hi,” Zekiel replied and then noticing two others with her, he stood up and then greeted them, “Well, hello Jan, and yes, you are Lee or should I call you Janel and Leejah?”

“The latter seems so formal so you can just call me, Lee, as you knew me in our mortal lives,” Leejah answered.

“Same here,” Janel also answered, “Hard for me to get used to the new names.”

“Well, it really does not matter between us,” Zekiel stated. “Still, you may find using your new names useful when dealing with some survivors. Say, what brings you two here?”

“We are a team and for a while at least we will be assisting you in this area,” Janel answered.

“Oh yes,” remembered Zekiel, “my first task involves Van. I would like to spend some time with him before you see him, Janel.”

“That sounds like a good idea,” she replied, “he has a way of acting badly when new things come along and he is certainly going to have a heaping helping of ‘new things’ to swallow now.”

“Janel, in the morning I would like for you to show me where you last saw him,” Zekiel requested and Janel nodded her head yes, as he heard her say yes in her mind. “We have much to plan. Leejah,

I wanted to discuss with you some survivors that you knew a short time before the Lord returned.”

Zekiel was already experiencing something he knew Elohim also had experienced. While he could know practically everything and even the ability to do just about everything himself, he kept himself from fully knowing all things that involved others as well as doing everything himself to allow others to provide information and do things as well themselves.

From the work he had done as a mortal he had always found the doing was often more enjoyable and satisfying than what was actually completed when the work was finished. He also was careful to not ‘listen in’ to the thoughts of others unless they desired their thoughts to be open to other spirit beings allowing quick and full understanding of each other. While he extended this courtesy to other spirit beings in general, he also limited this to those who were still mortal after he grasped their general mindset and willingness to cooperate. Those who were devious or in any way deceitful, he continued to tune in on their thoughts until this attitude fully changed toward meekness and humility in their spirit that was willing to listen, learn, and then follow the way of Elohim.

The discussions and plans went on through the night among the four spirit beings as the children and Carl slept. The four felt no need of sleep, food, drink, or even oxygen to breathe. They did not even need the fire to see each other but it seemed nice to sit and chat about a bonfire. Their talk involved people who were divided in their own minds and experiences concerning religion.

One set thought they had understood Biblical truths and kept the Laws of Elohim in the Old Testament including the seventh day and annual Sabbaths but had failed to understand many deeper spiritual truths found in the New Testament.

The End of the Beginning

Another set also believed they had been part of Elohim's people but were different in their beliefs and doctrines from the first set having no knowledge or understanding concerning truths of Elohim from the Old Testament and they misunderstood many essential New Testament teachings.

Both of these two sets had a certain amount of head knowledge but it was not sufficient to bring about true and complete heart felt acceptance of Yeshua Christ as their Savior, Lord, and Master. Both of these two groups of people had a lot of unlearning to do as well. The third set of people was not part of either of the other sets of religious thinkers. Their way of living came from family traditions of value and behavior in respect to life. They had practically no Bible training or understanding of the scriptures. Everything that had happened up to that time was just another 'bump in the road' to deal with and continue surviving. This third set would be the easiest to bring into understanding the truths of Elohim of the three sets as they had less 'unlearning' to do.

The saint's mission was to teach all three sets the truth of Elohim countering past errors and bringing them all into a living saving faith in Yeshua Christ that was uncompromised with error and fully dedicated in the true way of Elohim. While many had mouthed statements of living a life dedicated to Elohim, they were faking a sincere belief, as their heart was not in their words. Those still alive were all basically decent people but had failed in critical areas of their life as well as not truly accepting Yeshua Christ as Lord, Savior, and Master and therefore had not received the Holy Spirit. Only Elohim truly knew the hearts of men.

In the past before Yeshua returned, those who had truly accepted Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior demonstrated this by

really trying to change the way they lived and just as importantly, how they thought. Virtually every purposeful action comes as a result of a conscious thought. They would take a loss rather than take an unearned gain at the expense of others. There was a kindness and trustworthiness in their manner that could not be faked. While they were far from perfect or sinless as they lived their lives, they strived to overcome their shortcomings and were truly godly sorrowful each time they felt the Holy Spirit convicting their conscience of not living up to the measure of Christ. They lived this way before Elohim without trying to act or look ‘religious’ in the sight of others. Their appearance and their apparel were modest but did not distinguish them as the look and dress of some groups like the Amish did before the beginning of the End Time. These were now spirit born Sons of Elohim who would now teach this way of life to the mortals who had survived to the coming of the Lord.

Conversion is a process just like the development of a human being. The Holy Spirit comes into a person much like when a sperm cell enters an egg. In humans, actual birth is not instantaneous but comes after a period of development. Just as a human fetus may miscarry and die prematurely so can a person who turns away from Elohim and willingly goes back into a life of unrepentant sin whereupon Elohim takes the Holy Spirit from them and they die spiritually. King David’s sorrowful repentance for his sins is recorded in Psalm 51 beginning at verse 11 as he pleaded for Elohim not to take the Holy Spirit from him. The words quoted from Yeshua to those who accepted Him as Savior demanded a lifelong saving faith that bore fruit of the Spirit of Elohim that the Apostle Paul wrote in his letter to the church in Galatia.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name’s sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. (Matthew 10:22 KJV)

The End of the Beginning

¹⁶This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh. ¹⁷For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. ¹⁸But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. ¹⁹Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, ²⁰Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, ²¹Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of Elohim. ²²But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, ²³Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. ²⁴And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. ²⁵If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. (Galatians 5:16 - 25 KJV)

There were others who were alive as physical human beings because of simply time and chance. Still others were integral parts of the lives of those whom Elohim had sustained and protected who were transformed at the return of Christ. While they were not transformed as true Christians were, they had shared in the protection Elohim had given those whom He knew and worked through in the preceding darkest days that humanity had ever experienced. Just about all of these expressed their deepest gratitude to Elohim and those newborn Sons of Elohim for keeping them safe and alive as well. Nearly all of these individuals would eventually come to saving knowledge and faith early in the millennial reign of Christ.

Throughout the night, all four of them flickered at different times as they returned to Jerusalem to ask questions of the saints

remaining there such as Paul, Elijah, Moses, and John. As they made the trips, they often got to see the Christ, Yeshua as He was known during His life on earth and as He was known to the host of heaven before His life on earth. He always had time to speak to them answering their questions, encouraging, and even praising them for their enduring faith. Each was energized with a new strength of purpose, as they never had before along with zeal that would overcome all obstacles in their way. Yes, they had a thousand years to complete their missions but with their extreme awareness of all the details that needed to be done, it seemed like every second was needed and very precious in working to accomplish its end.

.....

Angels and many of the resurrected saints were caring for all the babies and those with undeveloped brains that had been resurrected. Zekiel's resurrected Mom and Dad were part of that work going on in Jerusalem. Together, this group would search the world to match the babies with the right married couples to be raised to maturity. They would be taught like all the other children who had been spared during the last days of earth before the return of Christ. Those who now had been healed with normal brains would also be placed with families around the world and learn with other young children as the years passed by during the Millennium.

While the babies and small children remained in Jerusalem under the care of spirit beings, they did not age. Only when they were actually adopted and then placed with couples around the world did they start to grow older. The Millennium would last for 1,000 years so there was plenty of time for couples to establish their relationships, get married, and after enjoying a time to be together as man and wife, they could decide when to start their families. There

The End of the Beginning

were no babies born to couples so having children depended on receiving a baby from the number being cared for in Jerusalem. This was like that of the fable of a stork delivering babies to a family that many children were told when they were very young many years before the return of Yeshua Christ.

Though some might call this an adoption, it was like the Heavenly Father, Yahweh, adopting a person who had His Holy Spirit who would become His child even as His Own Son, Yeshua Christ, as explained in Chapter 8 of the book of Romans. Every single baby and child being cared for in Jerusalem would find a home with loving caring parents. Their physical appearance was also matched so that if the couple were able to conceive a child, it would look exactly like the one given to them from Jerusalem. Each baby or small child would grow to maturity, marry, and eventually have families of their own. Most couples began with one child and after two to three years added another and then others as they enjoyed family life. It was like what many who had lived in the United States of America had experienced in what many thought of as the good old years of the mid 50's to the mid 60's typified by such old TV classic family shows as Ozzie and Harriet, Leave It To Beaver, and Father Knows Best.

Around the world, teams of Elohim's Saints sized up their situations and finalized plans for two great purposes. The first and foremost purpose was to teach all of earth's surviving human beings the true Way of Elohim and bring them to salvation through a true and living faith in Yeshua Christ. No more false or meaningless doctrines and traditions. No more compromises and half-truths. No more pagan rituals that had been substituted for true worship described in the books of the Bible or simply being ignored by following the writings of people in other books. No more keeping of manmade holidays in place of Holy Days Elohim established to

teach humanity of His place in their lives and His plan for them to fulfill their destiny.

The second great purpose was to rebuild cities and habitats for the billions of souls that would be part of the second resurrection who would take part in the Great White Throne Judgment. These would have one hundred years to learn to live by every Word of Elohim and to finally have their first real chance to accept Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior¹⁶. Those who truly accepted Elohim's truth and by having a living faith in Yeshua Christ would be transformed to Spirit bodies to live with the Lord and the Saints forever. Those who failed to do so by the end of one hundred years would be cast into the Lake of Fire and face eternity in hell fire. The Kingdom of Elohim would now reign on earth as it had in heaven. Its government would have no end and its increase would be continuous and forever.

.....

In the pit of hell, Satan lay without any movement, his body still tightly bound with chains. Yet, his evil mind feverishly schemed trying to think of ways he could escape and wreak havoc among those living on earth. He remembered something he had read in the Bible about being released after being bound for a thousand years. Ah yes, he thought, I will yet have my revenge on the Christ. I will again corrupt His prodigy who will curse Him. I will win in the end. Eventually, more of those puny miserable humans will follow me than Him. Ha, ha, ha....

.....

The End of the Beginning

In the third heaven, the Great and Almighty Father had been looking down upon the earth when His gaze went from there into the bottomless pit where he heard Satan's plans. Yes, Satan, He thought, you still have a role to play that the inhabitants of earth do not realize. In one thousand years, I will set you free for a season to try those who have not faced your temptations. I must be sure that anyone to be changed to immortal spirit bodies will never follow you and reject Me and My way. Then you and those who have followed you will face your final judgment.

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Part Five:

Working with Survivors

Chapter 19

Zekiel Meets with Van

They stood in the foothills of a mountain range. There were only charred remains of large forests and burnt patches of grass that had once flourished in this region.

“We were living in a large cavern inside that mountain. He is still there,” Janel said pointing directly at a sheer granite wall that was part of a mountain range called the Rocky Mountains that rose thousands of feet above them and then extended in both directions north and south. “The entrance to the cavern is just around that outcropping of foothills to our right that juts out over there just past those boulders. It is about ten miles from here to the entrance if you hike the trail that winds and goes around to the entrance that way. However, the chamber where Van is hiding is about four thousand feet directly inside that rock face from where we are standing.”

“I don’t need to go around to the entrance,” Zekiel smiled. “I’ll enter the cavern through this rock wall¹⁷. Please wait till I call you to come inside.”

Janel, Leejah, and Deejah sat down and leaned their backs against some slanting rocks next to the wall. It still gave them a tingle of excitement whenever they witnessed such things as watching Zekiel disappear as he began to walk through solid rock into the mountain. Then they continued a lively discussion they had begun during the night about things that had happened to them since they last saw each other before Yeshua’s returned.

Zekiel first heard some moaning and sniffles a person makes as they try to stifle their emotions and not to cry outright. As he came out of the rock, he found the cavern had been pitch black but with his presence, it now became illuminated. He then saw Van lying curled up in a fetal position. He was lying in a crevice that nearly hid his body in the cave's wall on the other side of the chamber from where Zekiel was now standing. Van's body shook as he sobbed and his clothes were torn and grimy. Many open sores covered the exposed dirty flesh of his arms, legs, and back. His hair that should have been white was dark because it was matted with grim, it was long and unkempt. Zekiel remembered his normally clean-shaven face that was now covered by a straggly beard.

Van suddenly noticed the dim light and called out in a stuttering gasping voice, "J...J...Jan, is...is that... you? Wh...wh...why di... did you leave me?" Zekiel remembered how Van would sometimes stutter when he got excited or upset. Van now turned over and his eyes widened incredulously seeing the glowing figure standing on the other side of the cavern. He began to scream out unintelligible sounds and tried to crawl even further into the crevice trying in vain to hide. Then he lay on the floor covering his face with his arms crying and shaking too frightened to speak coherently.

Zekiel picked up a stick and stuck it in a crack in the wall of the cavern near where Van was trying to hide. With a snap of his fingers, it became a torch that blazed and its light would allow Van to see more naturally.

"Do not fear," Zekiel said in a soft soothing voice. "Nothing will harm you now, Van."

"What are you, ...a ghost, a...a demon? How do you... know m...my na...name?" his voice stuttered as he trembled in terror.

The End of the Beginning

“I am a friend. Someone you once knew fairly well what must seem like a long, long time ago.”

“That voice, i...it seems somehow familiar. But, but, you are glowing, w...what are you?” Van’s voice still trembled as he peered between his fingers still in front of his face and looked at the glowing apparition before him.

“I have been sent by our Lord Yeshua Christ to bring you to safety,” Zekiel responded.

“Are y...you an an...angel?” Van asked with his mouth hanging open in awe and disbelief at what he was seeing. Slowly, his hands and arms lowered from his face.

“No, I was once a man made of flesh and blood just as you,” Zekiel answered as he came closer.

Upon looking closer at him for the first time, Van’s face first started to relax from its contorted form, and then suddenly twisted in anguish as he recognized the face of someone he had actually hated and betrayed in years past and he again drew back in horror.

“W...Wait...Zeke! **Zeke!**” he cried out, his voice shrieking and then whimpering. “Oh no! P...please don’t hurt me. I’m s...sorry for what happened. I don’t know why we, no, they did it. I...I wasn’t really part of that. I don’t know why...”

“You have nothing to fear from me, Van,” Zekiel replied now standing close beside him. “All that is in the past and I forgive you.” He bent over and lifted him to his shaky feet. Van grimaced in pain and started crying as his body shook in terror.

“Quite... please... You are hurt,” Zekiel said softly but firmly to him.

Van noticed that this person lifted his eyes as if seeing something above them. He also looked upward toward the roof of the cave but saw nothing. Suddenly, he felt a warm sensation as he saw Zekiel’s hands begin to glow more brightly and the glow went into his own arms where this being was holding him. The glow continued to spread as he felt a warm sensation throughout his body. His sore muscles and torn flesh began to quickly heal right before his eyes. The rags on his back changed to comfortable and clean clothing. When the glow left his body, he backed away to arm’s length looking directly at Zekiel’s face. His mouth opened and closed but no words came out. He was stunned by what he had just experienced and no words could express the wonder and awe he felt. His mind was racing madly trying to understand what had just happened and what it meant. Then his face slowly lost its wonder and became cold with a trace of anger and resentment.

“Where is Jan?” he now demanded. “I want to see Jan. Where have you taken her?”

“Jan is fine and you will see her soon,” Zekiel assured him. “But, first we need to do some talking about what happened years ago just before I left the church organization, God’s Church, Worldwide or GCW as many called it that we were both part of.”

“It wasn’t my fault,” he countered nervously as he suddenly began to remember things, he had tried so hard to forget.

The End of the Beginning

“We are not going to talk about faulting or blaming anyone,” Zekiel replied, “you need to face certain things so you can move forward and understand things you have not been able to in the past.”

“What are you doing here?” he demanded trying to change the subject. “Where did you come from? What’s making you glow? Did you rub against some phosphorus dust or something?”

“As I said before,” Zekiel repeated, “I have been sent by Yeshua Christ to you and others like you who have survived the Tribulation and Day of the Lord.”

“Oh my God,” Van drew in a deep gasp of air as his mind recoiled from memories of what had happened over the past few years, “it has been so terrible. [Jesus] is coming soon. It...it must be soon! All these terrible things happening, it can’t get any worse or no one will survive. You say he’s coming soon, real soon?”

“He has already returned, Van,” Zekiel announced. “His temple and throne have already been established on the Mount of Olives in Jerusalem. His millennial reign has already begun, Van.”

“Why that’s im...impossible,” he again began stammering. “It just can’t b... be or I...I would b... be there. What ki... kind of con game are yo... you trying to pull? I ca... can’t trust you. Yo... you were always trying to te... tell everyone things that w... were different from what w... we knew was the truth. We had the tru... truth and no one else...no one else had it. What you began sa... saying was heresy. That’s why we ha... had to stop you from speaking in our co...con...congregations.”

“Yes, I know well what you and the others did,” Zekiel stated. “You all rejected and ostracized me. But, it was not because I was

speaking heresy but because you and the other ministers were jealous that the members of your congregations really loved hearing what Elohim inspired me to speak about and were bored at your repetitious sermons about church traditions they had heard repeatedly for decades.”

“That’s n... not so,” Van said carefully, “why, I...I...I tried to be your fri...friend.”

“Is that why you told me to my face in front of Wyatt Wilson, the Area Director that I was no longer welcome to speak in your congregation and then went on to lie to your congregation telling them that I was not coming back to the congregation simply because I didn’t want to come there anymore?” Zekiel asked.

“That wa... was just a mis..un...misunderstanding,” he squirmed, “it was ju... just for a little whi... while to give yo... you a chance to re... rest and give you a chan...chance to think about not sa... saying things that were di...di...different from the rest of us. I...I...I really didn’t sa... say anything b...bad about you.”

“Van, Wyatt told you that he had listened to the tape recordings of my sermons and even he said that you were not telling the truth. You twisted my words. You said I said things that I simply did not say or even insinuate and the tape recordings of those sermons proved you and the other ministers of the conspiracy were lying beyond any doubt.”

“Bu... But we just knew if yo... you were not stopped so...so... soon you would have be... been saying things directly against wha...what our church be...beli...believed.” He admitted.

The End of the Beginning

“Is that why you and the other ministers in that area formed a conspiracy trying to discredit me and trying to have me censored and removed from the ministry of the GCW organization?” Zekiel asked.

“It was all T...T... Tom’s fault,” Van confessed. “He was outraged that yo... you were doing things on yo...your own and not following hi...his directions. Even when he was re... removed from being an area di... director you remember that he still tried to co... control everyone in this area. He... he began asking us what we heard yo... you preaching about and told us ti...ti... time after time that yo... you were actually saying or inferring things that we... were not doctrinally co...co...correct. We all be...began to think that h... he was right.”

“Maybe I was beginning to get on the fringes in some grey areas as you thought of them. However, I never mentioned these things in any of my sermons. Tom Baker was a likeable and friendly guy unless he began to think you disagreed with him. The fact was I was beginning to learn new truths from Elohim’s Word that went beyond what was the accepted ‘set of truths’ the GCW organization promoted. Still, the messages Elohim gave me to preach were all in line with what GCW believed but were delivered with power and urgency. I tackled truths none of the other ministers preached about in their sermons. They all kept repeating sermons about the Sabbath, or how those whom Elohim was calling at this time were ‘special’, or about prophecy that had way more error than truth. Elohim’s people needed encouragement. They needed inspiration to attain a closer walk with the Lord. They needed a challenge to be instrumental in changing the lives of everyone they knew to a saving faith in Yeshua Christ. None of you preached on these things. Maybe that was why your congregations wanted to hear me rather than you. No, none of you could scripturally refute anything I

preached as not being true. Is that why you all began to attack my 'delivery style' saying I sounded angry and too intense and was upsetting your congregations?" Zekiel asked.

"How else could w... we attack you," Van countered, "We could no...not understand how you were fi...fi...finding all those things in the Bible. You qu...quoted so many Bible verses with so little in be... between, to argue with what yo... you said we had to argue against the Bi...Bi... Bible."

"But all the congregations heard from me more of the truth than all of you preached. That is what they wanted to hear. Virtually every person in those congregations wanted me to come back and teach them more. Why would you want to stand between them and the Word of Elohim?" Zekiel asked.

"Bu...but a few of the Old Ti...Timers certainly didn't like it and didn't like you for teaching it. No one else t... tried to to teach so mu...much...from th...the Bible. I didn't like it ei...either. All those ignorant sh...sh... sheep crowding around yo...you, asking you questions li... like you were somebody im...important," Van spit out the words clearly revealing his anger as he remembered the scenes.

"Van, they knew I was nobody but the truth of Elohim's Word is everything and I was bringing it to them while you and others were not," Zekiel admonished.

"They should have been sa... satisfied with what the rest of us were te...telling them. It was Bible; it was the sa...same as we always tau... taught just like Herman P. Legweak taught us years ago," Van continued to argue.

The End of the Beginning

“Van, it is time you and others realize that Legweak was not sent by Elohim,” Zekiel told him, as he sternly looked him directly in the eye.

“What?” Van raised his voice, “you can't b...b... be serious. H... he was the one who bro...brought us all the t...tr... truth in the first place to set us on the right tr...track.”

“Tell me about his fruit?” questioned Zekiel, “what was his personal life like?”

“Awe you can't be... believe all those mudslingers and go...gos... gossips.”

“As Legweak himself often said, where there's smoke there has to be some fire.”

“But lo...look at the great work he b... built,” Van grasped for something to justify his position.

“Yes, exactly what did he build? I'll tell you what,” Zekiel elaborated. “Some of it came out of my pocket because I was sucked into that snake pit. While at first, I thought I was learning something special. Finally, the hypocrisy and outright immoral ungodly conduct by Legweak and other top church leaders was just too blatant and obvious to anyone not completely brainwashed by his methods.

I found out why he didn't want any member reading any publication that he didn't control and print. That church was his personal empire built by fleecing the flock. Remember all those letters he wrote of great financial distress asking everyone to sacrifice and give even more? You want to know what he did with all that money! He lavishly furnished his homes, added a swimming

pool, expensive paintings, and bought luxury cars and executive jet airplanes.

He had a knack of making impending horrifying prophetic pronouncements that scared people while telling them that they must, without question, follow him as the only escape. Thousands joined the bandwagon. He used psychology and motivational techniques of cults to dupe the people. He told those who listened to him that they were special and that only they were called to understand the mysteries of god as he taught them. Most of the membership vainly bought it all as their egos continued to grow not realizing how desperately poor, they were becoming both financially and spiritually.

“While he taught that people must keep the strict letter of the law such as the seventh day Sabbath, he continually violated these same laws with impunity. He and his cronies taught the membership to have contempt on all the rest of humanity as deserving god’s wrath for rejecting Legweak and his message. He made a show of his supposed exploits around the world as ‘preaching the gospel’. What he did was buy world leaders expensive gifts and throw extravagant parties. He was ashamed and refused to be called a minister of Christ. Probably one of the very few honest things he ever did.

“He and practically all of the leaders of his church organization, the Whole World Church of God (WWCG), were hypocrites, frauds, liars, drunkards, and many leaders practiced all kinds of perverse behavior as if they were above Elohim’s laws, which condemned such behavior. Possibly the only person who was as wicked as he was, was his son, Grover Ned. He, his son, and other top ministers were regularly exposed in newspaper and magazine articles and books, which those outside of his church read which revealed their many and continuing ungodly acts of sexual immorality, perversions, and excesses living in luxuries more so than most European royalties enjoyed.

The End of the Beginning

“Possibly the only thing his son, Ned did not do like Herman and his ministers was to lord over all their followers. Legweak and the other top ministers all lived in luxury and all laughed at the general membership calling them ‘dumb sheep’. Herman lived long enough to see the ‘Great Work’ he built begin to break up and after he died it continued to break up into dozens of splinter groups, all claiming to be his successor. These splinter groups continue to follow his teachings and his moneymaking scams and extravagant way of life at the expense of ignorant followers. It was so sad that there were so many basically good people over the years that were taken advantage of by such evil men.”

“I still say Herman P. Legweak was led by G..G... God no matter what personal faults the m...m...man had,” Van continued.

“In time, you will see that he was an agent of Satan and all who followed him and others like him followed a man not Elohim,” Zekiel declared.

“Even if that were true our n...new group was separate and di...different,” Van again countered, “Why yo... you yourself became part of us.”

“Yes, initially I thought that organization, God’s Church, Worldwide, was different. Even though it was started and run by Grover Ned Legweak, it was Elohim that led me to become a part of it. Maybe in many ways GCW was different at least when I became part of it. I honestly believed that Ned had changed until more and more information came out that he was still a corrupt and vile immoral person just as he had been before. He openly appeared to repent of the sins that were exposed. I have never seen anyone who could turn on the tears and appear so contrite outwardly. However,

time revealed he never truly had any godly sorrow for his evil and perverse behavior but only was sorrowful in being caught and facing punishment. After he was kicked out of the GCW organization I believe there was a turning point in which the organization had the choice to completely turn to Elohim or turn away.”

“Our church d... did a lot of good things,” Van responded, “we we... were a lot different from the other splinter WWCG groups.”

“But in time after its original founders under Grover Ned had all left the organization or passed away, the organization like all the rest of man’s churches, became self-centered, an end in itself. Then the GCW began to pull away from welcoming others to fellowship with it. It stopped working with others in the communities where it’s members lived and worked,” Zekiel remembered.

“Well as Herman often sa... said, ‘God was only ca...ca...calling an elite few at this ti...time while the rest of mankind wo...would have a chance after the mi...millennium’”, Van stated the old worn out phrase. This was the often-repeated slogan that was used whenever anyone asked about why there were no efforts in the GCW to seek the lost to find salvation in Yeshua Christ.

“Van, you know better than that. What do you think happened on the Day of Pentecost after Yeshua Christ ascended into heaven? I’ll tell you what actually happened. The call of Elohim went out to everyone who would hear and respond to the gospel message of salvation through the sacrifice of Yeshua Christ. Moreover, that door remained open nearly to the time He returned. The only reason there were not more to come to a saving knowledge of Christ was the failure of preachers and members of church congregations of all kinds to preach and truly live by the true gospel and lead people to

The End of the Beginning

Christ instead of building empires of devoted followers of an elite leadership of men instead of Christ,” Zekiel countered.

“Well, that’s what yo...you say,” Van replied tersely. “I don’t like other pe... people and their ideas that are di... different from what I was taught by Herman P. Legweak. And I wasn’t the only one wh...who saw things that way.” There was a smirk on his face and Zekiel shook his head in disbelief at the man’s audacity in spite of what had happened to him.

“Well, Van, sad to say, you all had your way. GCW’s leadership totally failed to back me but choose to support you and others who were doing wrong toward me. It was like being stabbed in the back with a knife, Van. I never thought you would join the conspiracy with them against me and sadly you became one of its greatest proponents. I guess you and the rest thought you were doing God a service by persecuting me for what I tried to do. Tell me, Van. What did you gain in the end?”

“Well, without yo... you stirring up tro... trouble we had most of our pe... people back thinking and doing what w...we have always done.”

“How many members and congregations did your organization have a year after I left?” Zekiel asked. “And, what about your congregation?”

“Well, it seemed some pe... people continued to be u...upset all the time and that upset others,” Van recounted. “My congregation? I don’t know why b... but so many people stopped coming to services w... we simply stopped having services every Sabbath in our city and just d... drove to other places. Guess that

happened to se... several other congregations. But, we still had Tom's church left. At least for a while until all he... hell broke out."

"One left? Can't you see what happened! There were five congregations in the state thriving and growing while I was 'allowed' to go to them and preach Elohim's truth. That does not account for dozens of other congregations in over twenty states that also began to shrink after I left the GCW," Zekiel sighed sadly.

"Well, it was yo... your fault," Van charged. "You didn't have to le...leave. You could have tow...towed the line and preached the same as we di... did."

Again, Van had tried desperately to shrug off responsibility blaming others for things he did and was just as guilty of doing as the rest. Zekiel remembered Israel's King Saul who did the same thing¹⁸ until his dying day and he shuddered at the thought of Van continuing to follow such a horrible pattern.

The End of the Beginning

Chapter 20

The Meeting with Van Concludes

Zekiel considered the thought, ‘Could I have kept my mouth shut, towing the line just like the others in the GCW??? No, Elohim had other plans for me!!!’

Zekiel again shook his head and said with finality to Van. “As you and other mislead ministers began barring me from speaking it was a sign from Elohim that He wanted me elsewhere. I never liked politicking and could not stand backstabbing. I finally decided that I could no longer be a part of an organization whose leaders not only allowed its ministers to promote lies about someone but also actually rewarded those who did wrong. The chairman of the board of GCW had wrote and said that my ministerial credentials were at stake of being revoked. I was instructed to figure out a way to get along with those lying ministers so they would allow me to return to their congregations to preach what they wanted me to preach. He actually backed the liars and totally failed to support me who was wronged. I guess he thought if those liars were punished or put out of the organization, they would draw off members from the organization and reduce its income. That was probably the main reason he backed them instead of me. That’s why I had to leave. I still had much to learn. Had I continued being a part of GCW and going along with ministers like you that would have caused me to be where you are right now or possibly dead and buried?”

“And just what do... does that supposed to me... mean?” Van asked smugly.

“Look at yourself, Van,” Zekiel admonished. “What do you see? Now look at me. I am no longer Zeke Ryan, human mortal

flesh and blood. I am now Zekiel, a living immortal spirit born Son of Elohim sent by Yeshua Christ personally to do His will on earth and into the universe beyond for all of eternity. Yeshua Christ is Lord and King of Kings now and forever on earth as well as in heaven!”

As Zekiel spoke, the ground shook and Zekiel’s countenance grew grim and power seemed to emanate from his being as his body grew white hot and lit the cavern like the sun while the earth moaned and continued to shake. Van cowered down closing his eyes and hiding his face. He tried again to find a crevice to hide in as he shook in fear at the awesome sight before him. Zekiel’s eyes followed him and were like intense spotlights illuminating Van like a prisoner trying to escape a prison being caught in a search light.

“You were not changed as I and others were because you did not have a true living faith in Yeshua Christ nor truly accepted Him as your personal Savior. You did not truly understand what He taught in His Word and were not living the life of Christ as well,” Zekiel’s voice boomed. “You had learned one of the many religions made by man that rejected important truths in order to keep their own traditions and control of others. All they were really about was power and wealth to be taken from those whom they could manipulate.”

“But, but, no it’s not like that,” Van’s voice whispered, “We we... were different; we ke...kept the Sabbath and Feast Days. We knew so much about pro...prophecy and many doctrinal truths the rest of the world’s churches di...di... did not know. We did not keep pagan holidays, we...we...we...”

“All that knowledge and rituals and yet it was worthless because you did not first have the love of Yahweh¹⁹ and true faith

The End of the Beginning

in His Christ in your hearts²⁰,” Zekiel’s voice returned from power to one of sadness. His countenance dimmed to a glow as his voice continued firmly, “You and others like you were truly lacking in so many important and essential ways. As most of the other religious organizations that kept the seventh day Sabbath you were so sure you knew all the truth that you readily condemned all other organizations that were different from you. All you did was criticize and demean them and the good they were trying to do and made no effort at all trying to find any common ground. If you had, you might have seen what you were truly missing. You did not work with others in any way to care for others outside your particular church and even care for those in your church was sparse. Remember what the Apostle James told us about the kind of religion Yahweh accepts?”

Religion that Yahweh our Father accepts as pure and faultless is this: to look after orphans and widows in their distress and to keep oneself from being polluted by the world.
(James 1:27 NIV)

“You thought only your organization’s beliefs, doctrines, practices, and traditions were perfect and complete while everyone else was wrong. You only tried to do some good when you thought someone was going to follow you so you could get money and obedience from them but when they did not submit to you, you cut them off completely. Pure religion was never about doctrines or church organizations. It was the life and way of Yeshua Christ, a way of faith, hope, and love that includes a lot of mercy and kindness to others regardless of their race, religion, or anything else. You were full of pride and arrogance mainly because you thought you were of an elite few who had discovered the annual Sabbaths while others did not see the importance of keeping them or the weekly Sabbath on Saturday. You and others like you were so blinded by

your own self-righteousness you could not see that even you were not keeping the Sabbath within the time frame Elohim had established but rather followed the tradition of men rather than the truth of Elohim.”

“What do yo... you mean?” Van’s voice sounded disturbed and less sure.

“When did you began and end your weekly Sabbaths?” Zekiel asked.

“Why, like we always did, how we were ta...taught,” Van answered. “The weekly Sabbath begins at sunset Friday and ends at sunset Sa...Saturday.”

“According to Jewish tradition,” Zekiel stated.

“According to the Bi... Bible,” Van countered.

“Not so, Van,” Zekiel, stated firmly. “While I did not preach this, I did talk to others at the home office about it. I tried to get them to understand the truth that Elohim’s Word really teaches but like most other Sabbath keeping church organizations they were so set in their traditions they would not listen.” Zekiel began to quote scriptures and explained them exactly as to what they said instead of reading into them twisted ideas of men concluding with:

“Elohim called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So, the evening and the morning were the first day. (Genesis 1:5 NKJV)”

“The light of day defined the beginning of each day. The darkness of night ended and concluded the period of time known as

The End of the Beginning

the complete 24-hour day. Day comes first and then night just as the scripture plainly says. For these words to describe the entire day they must summarize or show the completeness of the times to which they refer. Thus, when it says ‘the evening’ it simply means the daylight portion was concluding and ‘the morning’ concluded the night portion and together they concluded the entire day. It’s just that simple,” Zekiel explained.

“So, you say the Jews were wrong about that?” Van asked still puzzled.

“Yes, and many other things as well,” Zekiel stated. “Their religion was like the rest of men’s religions. They took some truth and added their ‘spin’ on it. Such was the case of how the Jews began dealing with the Sabbaths after captivity. They began to back up the beginning of observance supposedly to help keep them from profaning the Sabbath by working during the night and until well after the morning sun. Eventually, the tradition replaced the very Commandment of Elohim. You and others like you followed them not Elohim. You kept regular time as holy and what was literally holy time as regular. As such you were not a lot different from those religions that kept the Sabbath on Sunday.”

“Are you t... trying to tell me that there will be so... some ‘Sunday keepers’ who will be in God’s Kingdom?” Van asked with an irritated sound in his voice.

“Not will be, Van, ARE!” Zekiel informed him, “in fact, most of the spirit-born Sons of Elohim are from churches that kept the seventh day Sabbath on Sunday.”

“No, no. no I can’t believe that,” he argued. “That is totally against what I, I, no w... we have always believed. No, I’ll never believe that could happen.”

“Van, it is that kind of attitude that has kept you out of Elohim’s Kingdom even now,” Zekiel told him sternly. “And, unless you begin to open your mind to replace the errors of men’s traditions and accept the truth of Elohim you will never become a part of it. Even the errors that many had such as keeping the Sabbath on the first day instead of the seventh were less of a problem with Elohim than a stiff neck, uncaring, unloving, prideful, and self-righteous heart. Let me tell you again, you will soon see that there are in fact, many times more from the organizations that you and others like you condemned than there are of Seventh Day Sabbath Keepers. The simple fact is even concerning the Sabbath; Elohim has always placed the spirit and intent ahead of the letter of His Laws. Those who worked six days and rested the seventh kept the intent of Elohim’s Law even if they kept it on a different day. Elohim truly is merciful toward those who were ignorant of some things but righteous in true faith and love. It was this kind of true faith which Elohim imputed the righteousness of the law to them in mercy²¹. I might as well tell you that your seventh day Sabbath keeping churches were just as much a part of Babylon as practically every other church organization around the entire world.”

“What,” he shuddered? “How can that be when we ke... kept the Sabbath?”

“There are ten commands in the Ten Commandments not just one about the Sabbath. You became like the Pharisees of old who made an idol of one commandment while failing so miserably in applying all ten in love thereby serving Elohim and your fellowman. An organization with leaders at the top that exercised absolute

The End of the Beginning

control over many individual church congregations is the key to what drove such organizations²². It models what Babylon was really all about from the beginning. That system came from Satan and was first established on earth by Nimrod before the building of the Tower of Babel. It was a system that combined total political and religious control. Such organizations mixed truth with error. The leaders of modern Babylon appeared righteous outwardly but were hypocrites full of evil as they continually and deceitfully directed their members to live one way but themselves were purveyors who indulged in excesses, perversions, and gross immorality. They kept their members confused and so busy they didn't have time to question or even think for themselves. Perhaps one of their greatest crimes was they tore families apart and isolated their members from everyone not a part of that specific organization. Babylon's system over the years gradually brought most church organizations together under the deceit and lies and confusion of Satan and finally into the great false church organization lead by the False Prophet that was an integral part of the New World Empire lead by the Beast. Elohim tried to call his children out of it, remember?"

After these things, I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great authority, and the earth was illuminated with his glory. And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying, "Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and has become a dwelling place of demons, a prison for every foul spirit, and a cage for every unclean and hated bird! For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury." And I heard another voice from heaven saying, "Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues. For her sins have

reached to heaven, and Elohim has remembered her iniquities. Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she has mixed, mix double for her. In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow; for she says in her heart, 'I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.' (Revelation 18:1-7 NKJV)

“But, I thought that referred only to the gr...great false church, which we thought was the Roman Catholic Church. Some thought it was the Pentecostal churches. Still others thought it was Islam. How could anyone foretell how all three of these as well as most of the other Protestant churches on earth would join forces to become the religion of the New World Empire of the Be...Beast and False Prophet?” Van tried to reason. “But our church never joined it. We were small and our congregations were loosely controlled by our organization’s headquarters.”

“The simple truth is Elohim never intended for any church group to become an organization that would grow into thousands under one roof nor to develop a central leadership that powerfully controlled numerous other groups in an authoritarian manner. He wanted cooperation among separate congregations and at best a kind of confederacy or alliance of individual congregations working together for common purposes. The more numerous groups were centrally ruled with an iron hand of autocratic leadership that controlled and manipulated the masses the more in line it was with Babylon. The GCW organization came directly from its parent church organization, the Whole World Church of God (WWCG), which had pure evil in its leadership in the person of Herman P. Legweak, and those that followed him. He and his other top leaders all tried to look and sound righteous. They used or rather misused the very laws of Elohim with their own spin in controlling and

The End of the Beginning

draining the financial life's blood from the membership ever spreading their power drawing in others through fear and deceit so they too could be used. Remember the first, second, and third tithes?" Zekiel asked.

"Yes, but families used the second tithe for themselves," Van responded. "And, the third tithe went to the widows."

"Remember the sermons at the various Feast sites as they began to chastise and condemn members from spending the entire second tithe on themselves and their families and friends and not giving a substantial amount of the 'excess second tithe' as an offering to the organization," Zekiel reminded him. "And did you ever meet any widow who received any help from the central headquarters? I remember hearing from some dissident ministers who left that organization that the third tithe was redirected to the church ministry as a bonus to their already excessive salaries."

"Oh yes," Van remembered, letting his guard down a little.

"All those other groups who were off-shoots of the original WWCG including yours who tried to follow that kind of system and pattern of central control were just as much a part of Babylon as any other. Grover Ned Legweak tried a different approach from his father, Herman. He set up a board to control the organization. At first, he had the deck stacked, as it was, with a majority of his supporters but over time, he lost his edge. As publicity kept popping up of his sexual misbehavior, this caused many to leave the organization. After gaining a majority on the board, others at the top finally booted Ned out after a video tape of his immoral conduct was publicly aired that no one could refute. Nevertheless, Ned simply formed another organization and continued the same kind of practice that had supported his father for so many years until he joined his

father in the grave. He was as charismatic as his father was and people followed him ignoring the kind of man, he was just like those who followed his father, Herman. As I said before it was really all about power and wealth for the few at the top at the expense of all others. I think in Ned's case, he was always more about power and having a following than about money. It works the same for nations as it does for churches. Just the same as when Nimrod began it and it works best or should I say worst when it combines politics and religion," Zekiel explained.

Van sat down in despair and shook his head. He had now heard the most unbelievable things from someone he had once thought a heretic but seeing him now, like this? Was this some kind of test or trap? He stood up and asked, "How d... do I really know if you are te...telling the truth or just a clever lie? Prove to me by some sign th... that you are what you sa... say you are and not just some de...demonic spirit trying to deceive me."

"It is not by miracles that you can know if what I say is truth. You have seen the agents of the Beast power and his False Prophet doing all kinds of miracle-like exhibitions. You cannot just by seeing me know the truth as well. However, know this, Yeshua is the Christ, Lord, Savior, and only begotten of the Father. Yeshua came in the flesh and died for the sins of all of humanity to reconcile them to Yahweh, the Father. False spirits and the spirit of Anti-Christ cannot make such a statement as I have told you," Zekiel proclaimed as the very Word of Elohim thundered in Van's ears.

*Who is a liar but he who denies that Yeshua is the Christ?
He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son. (1st John
2:22 NKJV)*

The End of the Beginning

Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of Elohim; because many false prophets have gone out into the world. By this you know the Spirit of Elohim: Every spirit that confesses that Yeshua Christ has come in the flesh is of Elohim, and every spirit that does not confess that Yeshua Christ has come in the flesh is not of Elohim. And this is the spirit of the Antichrist, which you have heard was coming, and is now already in the world. (1st John 4:1-3 NKJV)

Van again fell to his knees and cowered in fear but Zekiel took hold of his arms and lifted him upright as if he were a small child. He then saw the look in Zekiel's eyes as those filled with true compassion rather than wrath or bitterness. As soon as Van was able to stand on his own, Zekiel reached down and picked up a stone and instantly it was transformed into a loaf of bread that smelled as if it had been just taken from an oven.

"You need more than just spiritual food. You are hungry and this will satisfy your hunger." Van reached hesitantly out for the loaf of bread. As soon as he felt its warmth and softness, he began devouring the bread almost choking as he filled his mouth and chewed. He watched as Zekiel reached down, picked up a rock-solid hard piece of granite, shaped its jagged edges smooth, and curved it into a cup as if the stone was clay with just his hands. He then tapped his finger on the edge of a jagged rock that extruded from the cavern wall and water began running into the cup he had just shaped.

The cup he handed to Van when it was brimming over with fresh pure water. Van took the cup and squeezed it. Yes, it was a rock. He drank from the cup and continued to eat the bread as one who was close to starving to death. He looked in amazement at the loaf of bread for he continued to tear off pieces of it, the loaf continued to fill his hand. After each swallow of water from the cup,

he noticed that it continued to be full of water no matter how much he drank.

“Van, I must commend you. You were right to be cautious,” Zekiel told him, “The Holy Scriptures also tells us to prove all things through the witness of two or three. Here now are others to affirm that what I have told you is the truth.”

Suddenly three other spirit beings stepped into the cavern out from the solid rock walls of cave. Van dropped the bread and cup of water from his hands again shaking in fear as he started backing up against the cave’s wall.

“Van,” a familiar voice spoke to him. Then his eyes focused and he recognized that one looked like his wife, Jan. Then he saw that another who had been their friend Lee and the third one had been Zeke’s wife, Dee. He stood stupefied noticing that these three also glowed as Zekiel.

“Van,” Janel continued. “Everything Zekiel has said is true. I too have been changed, Van. As you see, I am now spirit and no longer flesh and blood.” She approached him and took him in her arms as he nearly passed out falling into shock. She held him up as he slumped down as all his strength left him. He began to sob and moan uncontrollably wanting to enter unconsciousness to escape what he was hearing and seeing.

“Everything will be alright, Dear one,” Janel said comforting him and holding him in a loving embrace. “But you must begin to understand that there are many things that must change in your thinking and way of life. You must learn to truly trust in Yeshua Christ and really accept Him as your personal Savior, Lord, and Master. You can only be saved by faith in the Son of Yahweh and

The End of the Beginning

not simply by trying to earn salvation by what you know and what you do.

“Some of the doctrinal truths you believed were right but many were wrong. There are some things especially related to dealing with others that you were very wrong about. You must begin to see that your attitude and behavior toward others who are different from you is not like our Lord Yeshua so you must learn to change it.”

As Van began to think about all he had heard, as he was led toward the entrance of the winding cavern. Janel had to hold Van up as he kept stumbling nearly falling. Leejah went to Van’s other side to provide balance but more to show care for Van because Janel could have carried the entire mountain as easily as the shirt on Van’s back all by herself. Zekiel and Deejah lead the way.

“Today will be new beginning for many people,” he said to Deejah.

“Yes,” she replied. “I think that other group of people not far from here will be happier to see us than Van was. They are hiding in some abandoned buildings.”

“On our trip over here, I spotted over a dozen such groups of people,” Zekiel acknowledged. “No more than about half a dozen people in any group. Some were more needful of help than others were. I think we should have Janel and Leejah attend to some as we attend to others and bring them all together.”

“We can make use of our spirit powers and take care of all of them right now, if you like,” she reminded him.

“I like, excellent idea,” he smiled raising his eyebrows in admiration at her insight. “No time like right now to go into ‘Warp

Speed’.” He laughed thinking of a sci-fi space series that had been on TV a long time ago that used that term. Now he was actually doing things at speeds making the TV programs’ ‘Warp Speed’ seem like the pace of a snail in comparison.

In less time than it would take for a person to blink an eye, Zekiel and Deejah discussed this and made plans with Janel and Leejah. Van while still stupefied never noticed when they were actually gone attending to others. To him they were always right there. Each of the other groups now had someone strange and wonderful to care for them. Healings were done first and feeding was done secondly. Some were nearly naked as their clothing was in shreds. With just a spoken word, they now had clothing that was durable and perfect for the weather and conditions that they would experience for some time to come in that area along the continental divide of the Rockies.

These separate groups were in turn lead toward a single central location. It would take weeks to reach their destination, as some were several hundred miles from the others. The four spirit beings also talked and met with other spirit beings on missions like their own, thousands of miles away. They discussed situations and problems they were facing in dealing with the survivors. Zekiel even took time, spirit time, to visit with Moel. Both Zekiel and Deejah were present with their children and Carl a great deal of earth time while in Spirit time they were at many other places working with survivors. They looked forward each time they were recalled to the throne of the great King of Kings for further instructions and to learn additional truths. Even though they were now immortal, they began to realize that there would always be new things to learn.

The End of the Beginning

Chapter 21

Helping a Group of Survivors

To anyone just passing by, the buildings looked as if no one had been near them for years. Zekiel knew exactly where to find the survivors who were hiding there. He entered the room finding only one of the three men in the building awake. A blond haired partially bald middle-aged man was kneeling with his elbows on a chair and his face buried in his hands as he was praying. Nearby was a pile of cardboard and scraps of material that had been his bed.

“Ron,” Zekiel spoke softly. Then he repeated when the man did not respond, “Ron, I must talk with you.”

“Fellows, I have asked you not to disturb me when I’m praying. So, Johnny or Bob whoever is talking please be quiet,” he said; but, then became somewhat confused when he looked over his right shoulder toward the other two men and saw that they appeared to still be sleeping.

“Ron,” Zekiel again said in a louder voice that drew Paul’s attention so he turned his head upward to the left. At first, he just stared with his mouth open. There hovering a few feet from him was a person unlike any he had ever seen before. There was a glow pulsating about the man that was both frightening and awesomely beautiful. This man seemed to actually float in the air about a foot above the floor.

Then a thought entered his mind as he leaped to his feet and began screaming and jumping around. “Yes, lord, we are ready, take us to heaven, thank you lord, thank you [Jesus],” he then fell on his

knees, bowing down before Zekiel as one of the other men awoke and weakly roused to see what the commotion was all about.

“Ron, do not bow to me. Rise up and stand on your feet before me and listen to what I say. Our Lord Yeshua Christ has sent me. I am here to help you see the truth and find salvation. Not take you to heaven. My name is Zekiel, servant of the Most High Elohim and Yeshua Christ now King of Kings,” Zekiel told him.

“It’s an angel, Oh my, an angel, Oh lordy, lordy!” Bob, the other man said weakly rousing to stand up but falling back down onto the heap that was his bed.

“I am not an angel,” Zekiel resounded forcefully causing the building to shake and his countenance to glow even brighter.

“You’re not an angel?” Ron repeated just staring as if in a daze.

“Not an angel! Oh Lordy, then you must be the devil come to take us all to hell! Oh no, please, no!” Bob cried out pulling a ragged blanket over his head. Both began to sob and wail.

“My friends,” Zekiel spoke to them in a comforting voice that stilled their moaning, “Rest assured that no harm will come to you now that I am here.”

“What are you and what are you doing here, if you aren’t an angel or a devil? We are supposed to be going to heaven. We have been good. We believe in [Jesus]. We’ve been waiting for the rapture. Why hasn’t it happened? All the Baptist, Pentecostal, and other evangelical ministers preached that the rapture was supposed to happen before all these horrible things began. Why aren’t you taking us to heaven?” Ron asked in despair.

The End of the Beginning

“Yeshua or Jesus as you have been misinformed, has returned exactly as He promised. He is now here on earth in Jerusalem. There is no reason for any to wish to go to heaven right now when Yeshua [Jesus] Christ is here on earth and will be here to reign for one thousand years.”

“You mean He is here? I don’t understand. Why? He was supposed to take us all to heaven,” Ron asked confused and half-dazed. “Why didn’t He rapture us like we were told before these terrible things began to happen? I began to think I was crazy to believe the Bible anymore. Nothing has happened like all those prophecy preachers and book writers about the End Times said would happen.”

“The Word of Elohim that you call the Bible, is true,” Zekiel stated and began to explain. “The problem is that so many who thought they knew the truth only knew what they had been led to believe by others who did not fully know or understand it as well. It was the blind leading the blind. They had many things really mixed up and were not able to bring others like you to a saving faith.

“The concept of a ‘rapture’ came from people who took scripture out of context. They were wrong and mislead many people. Sadly, when many saw the rapture did not happen, as they had been led to believe, they lost faith in the Word of Elohim and their own churches. Many of them began to follow the Beast and his New World Empire religion.

“You, like many of them, had faith in people and organizations and followed them but you never had a true faith in Yeshua Christ and did not follow Him. There was a person that you knew not very long ago named Lee. She tried to teach you truth but you would not give up your traditions and false beliefs.”

“Lee!” Ron remembered. “Yes, I thought she was a friend until she deserted us. Always talking nonsense. She too said the rapture would never happen. She even talked about righteous living came from obeying the commandments and that no one was ever going to heaven and there was no such thing as an ever-burning hell fire where sinners would suffer for all eternity. Can’t believe all the crazy things she said.”

“You said she was nuts and we shouldn’t listen to her, Ron,” Bob ventured as he carefully looked out from under the blanket.

“Well, you need to start remembering what she said and begin learning what is the truth,” Zekiel stated sternly as he looked Ron in the eye. “You must begin to accept the truth of all things. Ron, you know in your heart that she did not desert you. It was you who deserted her. If it were not for her leading you out and away from danger many times over the last few years you would have surely perished. Remember that time when she refused to leave that family and their sick children when the enemy was approaching the town and you all wanted to leave. She told you that Elohim would protect you there but you and the other two as well as five more people were the ones who left and deserted them.”

“But the enemy was coming, we had to get out of there,” Ron argued.

“I tried to tell you, Ron that we should stay there. She had been right all those other times,” Bob chided.

“Elohim protected Lee and those with her right where you left them. The enemy just passed them by and never saw them. Ron, had you stayed with Lee the other five and your brother would be

The End of the Beginning

alive today,” Zekiel said as he looked at the third man still lying in bed having not moved while everything had been happening.

“Oh no, Johnny,” Ron ran crying to the man’s side, “Not my little brother. He can’t be dead. Oh no, Johnny, please do something. Please, please,” He cried as he took his dead brother in his arms and began to rock him.

“Let me have him,” Zekiel commanded as he reached down and took the young man from Ron. Zekiel lifted him up in his arms as if he was a small child. Then he prayed aloud, “Most high Lord Elohim above. Let your power and glory be manifest. Show to these men that I am your servant and that You have sent me to them. Let them see your love and mercy by giving this young man back his life.”

With that, Zekiel’s face and body began to glow brightly. He breathed air into the young man’s mouth and his body also began to glow. Suddenly, his arms and legs expanded from their bone thin shape to that of strong muscles. He then jerked liked an electrical shock had hit him and his eyes opened.

Zekiel carried him and sat him down in the chair Ron had his elbows on as he had been praying. Ron and Bob circled around Johnny. The young man, Johnny, at first just sat there shaking his head and then suddenly stopped and looked up at the others and smiled at them.

“Hi Guys,” he said, “Don’t know why; but I feel a little dizzy. I was just dreaming the most amazing dream.”

Then Zekiel explained what had happened, “This young man died just before I entered this room. Normally, He would have awakened in the second resurrection but I decided that he should not have to wait that long. He would not have died if I had come here sooner and restored his strength. But, like the gospel account of

Lazarus dying and Yeshua delaying his coming. As Yeshua came and called Lazarus out of the tomb; to show you Elohim's mercy and goodness, Ron you have your brother back from the dead."

"You say I was dead?" young Johnny asked as he faced the strange man whom he first saw when he opened his eyes before being put in the chair.

"Yes, you were Johnny," Ron blurted out, "This man is Zekiel, and he brought you back to life."

"The power of the Holy Spirit gave you back your life," Zekiel explained to Johnny.

Johnny rose from the chair and joined with Ron and Bob as they all began to jump around and shout praises to Elohim as they were overcome with joy and thankfulness. Ron and Bob soon had to stop and the two of them slowly collapsed on the floor because they were still very weak from the trauma they had been living through. Johnny stood there awestruck as Zekiel put his hands on both men as they lay on the floor. Zekiel looked upward saying a short prayer, and the power of the Holy Spirit flowed from him into the two men. Their bodies filled out and the sores disappeared as new clothing covered them.

They rose up and again raised their hands and thanked Elohim for several minutes before Ron stopped and turned to face Zekiel.

"How could I have been so stupid and so stubborn?" Ron finally admitted as his past flashed before his mind's eye. "I am beginning to understand that I really don't deserve a chance for hope. I guess I did a lot of bad things thinking my ideals made it right. I don't even know what love really is. Sir, if Elohim will be merciful

The End of the Beginning

to me, I am ready to change and do what is right in order to truly serve our Lord.”

“That about sums it up for me too,” Bob chimed in.

“I want to be with Elohim for all eternity,” Johnny said. “I didn’t have much time for heaven to seem real. This time I want to be sure I will be with our Lord forever.”

“That is a great beginning, fellows. Now I have things to do and I’m going to call on some friends of mine for help,” Zekiel said and briefly closed his eyes.

Instantly, two other people appeared in the room just as Zekiel disappeared from their sight. Ron recognized one and exclaimed as he fell on his knees, “Oh, Lee, I am so sorry for all the trouble I put you through.”

Lee went to him bending down putting her arms around him and consoled him. Bob and Johnny also came over and hugged her as they also wept and begged to be forgiven for leaving her, “That does not matter anymore, my friends. Ron, you were always so stubborn but Elohim loves you anyway. This time you all will listen to the truth of Elohim. I must admit that some things I told you about heaven and hell before we separated were not true. While at the Marriage Supper of the Lamb my guardian angel taught me from the Holy Scriptures where I was wrong. I’ll teach you all the new things I have just learned and go back over the things I had correct that I tried to teach you guys before we parted.”

Then the other person came up beside them and Leejah told them, “My new name is Leejah and this is Janel who is also your friend.”

Leejah then reached down into a corner of the room and picked up several old bricks and all three men's eyes grew as big as saucers as they saw the bricks change into fresh bread. They eagerly took the bread and began woofing it down. Janel had also picked up several old rusty cans and changed them into large glasses that were filled with sparkling clear water that the men drank to wash down the bread. Nourished and feeling full of vitality they followed Leejah and Janel out of the building.

As they began to walk down a road that lead south Ron asked, "Where are we going?"

"To rescue others like you," Leejah replied, "Billions have perished during the Great Tribulation but there are still millions left. They are suffering, hungry, and in great despair. We will give them sustenance but more importantly we will give them hope and love."

.....

Over the entire earth just as in the area previously known as North America, vast numbers of teams of the Saints of Elohim gathered scattered survivors of the age ending cataclysmic destruction. These were healed and were given hope and just as importantly they were given a purpose. In various locations, new towns would be rebuilt where the old ones had been totally destroyed with not a single brick lying on top of another. The survivors began building new kinds of cities that would house an innumerable number of people. They would work six days a week and rest the seventh. Each day they would gather before going to their respective jobs. At this time, they were taught certain principles along with a glimpse of the big picture of how their efforts contributed to the

The End of the Beginning

whole. Each evening smaller groups would gather for a meal during which they received additional teaching and information.

Some of their questions were answered in a rather unique way. Historical questions particularly were popular because of the way they were answered. About the group a bubble appeared that engulfed them. Then they would find themselves immersed in a setting in which the actual events of history took place in the past. They could stop the action, move in slow motion, 'fast-forward' it, or even back the scene up as they moved above, beside in any direction, or within what was taking place invisibly, totally unnoticed by the historic people involved. They saw, heard, and even smelled what took place in the most incredible manner of things they had read or heard about during their lives before the tribulation and Day of the Lord and what was written in the Bible. Perhaps the most incredible thing they witnessed was when the Spirit born Son of Elohim Saint allowed them to hear what each person actually thought as they acted out each historical event. Following this there would be a question and answer session in which individuals were encouraged to tell others what they thought about what they had witnessed.

There were many questions concerning what the Bible taught on many subjects. Of interest to many were questions about the Law of Elohim and grace. All the answers came from the Holy Scriptures. These often appeared in large print on the surface of a 'bubble' that surrounded them where all could see and read the passages. To the astonishment of all they not only saw the words but also could hear them spoken in their minds. Those whose reading skills were limited had no problem as they could hear these words as well and were quickly learning and refining their ability to read. Every subject presented in the scriptures became amazing clear even for those concepts that in the past that were virtually unfathomable. The Sons

of Elohim fully explained them to each person's satisfaction. It was as if the Word of Elohim was being written within their hearts and minds.

The Holy Scriptures appeared in many translations about them and some noticed that some translations were blank for certain passages while others were present. The why was answered in a simple and clear manner. In the missing passages of some translations were errors and only those whose context and wording was in accordance with truth remained. In some passages, some words were replaced but in some entire verses were omitted. It astonished some of the more Biblically literate that some verses in the original authorized King James Version were deleted. No translation was left untouched with deleted passages. However, by reading from them all the text of the complete Bible was available totally intact and in truth. One thing that helped them was all the scriptures concerning a subject could be made to appear together. They could read passages from one book and then go to another and then another and so on till they fully understood the subject as taught from the Word of Elohim. They found that a true understanding of what the scriptures taught came more from context than in simply learning the definition of each word. This is because the same word had several meanings depending on how it was used.

It did not take very much time for comfortable living quarters to be built by each group. Initially, single individuals shared barrack type housing while married couples had their own separate cabin. Married couples soon discovered that no children would be conceived during the millennium. Depending on their ability and desires, each couple was given small babies and/or small children to raise as their own. Family life flourished in the small communities and everyone helped each other with things that needed to be done that were too much for one family to do alone.

Chapter 22

Moel and Marjah's Mission

They shall bring the captives from the north country...

For thus says Yahweh: "Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations; Proclaim, give praise, and say, 'O Yahweh, save Your people, The remnant of Israel!' Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the ends of the earth, among them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and the one who labors with child, together; A great throng shall return there. They shall come with weeping, and with supplications I will lead them. I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters, in a straight way in which they shall not stumble; For I am a Father to Israel, And Ephraim is My firstborn. Hear the word of Yahweh, O nations, and declare it in the isles afar off, and say, 'He who scattered Israel will gather him, and keep him as a shepherd does his flock.' For Yahweh has redeemed Jacob, and ransomed him from the hand of one stronger than he. Therefore, they shall come and sing in the height of Zion, streaming to the goodness of Yahweh; For wheat and new wine and oil, For the young of the flock and the herd; Their souls shall be like a well-watered garden, and they shall sorrow no more at all. "Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, And the young men and the old, together; For I will turn their mourning to joy, will comfort them, and make them rejoice rather than sorrow." (Jeremiah 31:7-13 NKJV)

The terrible trembling of the earth had finally stopped. Jason crawled back toward the stairway that he had stumbled and fell down some time before. How long has it been he wondered? A faint beam

of light revealed a pile of rubble between him and the outside world. A world that had been full of terror so great he wondered that his mind was still capable of thinking sanely about anything. As he pulled aside broken pieces of building materials, he recalled that incredible bright light he saw coming toward the earth. He remembered that he had begun to step down the treads of the steps and then had stumbled and fell when a deafening searing sound something like a horn and then a thundering sound kind of like a shout added to the loud noise. Both were so loud it felt like the sound had nearly ruptured his eardrums. What in the world could have made such sounds? The sounds even caused buildings to crumble. One had nearly buried him as it fell down the stairway into this cellar. How many days had passed? Did the meteor or whatever it was hit the earth? Is anyone left alive out there? His thoughts were filled with anxiety wondering just what he would find if he was able to get out of what had been his shelter. More like a prison or a tomb, he had begun to think as time passed by. Had it been several days? He had no way of knowing. There was debris everywhere that prevented him from trying to stand up.

He had worked on removing the rubble on the stairway for hours. He knew that was the way out. As he reached up and removed one last piece of crumbling wallboard the sun nearly blinded him. He continued to crawl up the stairs through the opening he had made in the rubble and finally he pulled himself into the open air. As his eyes adjusted to the sun's light, he saw about him piles of rubble in every direction. None of the buildings that he had fled between, running, trying desperately to find safety, were left standing. How strange it was when the prison he was held in began to crumble around him. He had only one thought and that was to run. Not even the guards had seemed to notice him as they too ran about screaming in fear. Then a shiver flashed through his body as he noticed the strangest thing of all as he sat on the top stair. There was no sound.

The End of the Beginning

No more explosions, no crashing sounds of buildings collapsing, no vehicle motors, no shouts or other sounds made by people, machines, guns, or even birds.

But, wait. What was that sound he was now hearing?

It was like a loud beating of a drum playing a rhythm that he should have known, as it seemed familiar. Where was it coming from? He moved his body and sat on the concrete floor with his legs still dangling down the stairs. As His breathing began to slow, it seemed the sound of the drum also slowed. He just kept listening, trying to figure out what that beating sound was. Then he realized as he now felt throbs of pain keeping time with the beat...the sound he heard was the beating of his heart.

His mind cleared and then he noticed a faint new sound like that of a breeze and then he felt it blow his hair. He slowly began to make out the sounds of some birds somewhere in the distance singing and chattering. But there were none of the sounds that had incessantly filled his ears for the past few years. He struggled to stand but found his right leg was hurting too much to put any weight on it. In despair, he rolled over on his side.

Great, he thought, now I can die out here and the birds will feast on my rotting carcass instead of the rats down in that hole in the ground. Why am I still alive? Why did I keep on going, hoping...hoping for what? Why didn't I just give up like the rest? Why?

“May I help you?”

“Ohhhh!” cried Jason both in shock and terrible pain as he twisted about to face the direction the voice had come from.

Nearby him stood a man like none, he could ever remember seeing before. He did not have an emaciated frame clothed in rags like others he had been with during the last few months. Nor did he wear the uniform and carry a weapon like the guards. He was clothed in a long white robe with a shining golden belt. This certainly was not like the kind of suit or other clothes worn by those who had questioned him or gave directions to the guards. Somehow, his dark skin glowed even in the full sunlight. Who...what was this man? How had he gotten so close to him as he had just finished looking about and no one was in sight?

“Ohh!” groaned Jason in severe pain, “Who are you?”

“You can call me, Moel. I was once a man just as you are. I have been sent by the Great King to help you,” the man replied as he reached toward Jason.

“Please, don’t hurt me!” Jason moaned as he put his arm over his head and closed his eyes in fear. The moment the man called Moel put his hands on him a warm radiant feeling spread from his arms throughout his body. Then by himself, the man or whatever he was lifted Jason up from the sidewalk and stood him on his feet as if he were a small child.

“I ...can’t...walk...,” Jason began to stutter as he was lifted, but to his amazement, he did not collapse again in pain as he stood on his feet. In fact, he did not feel any pain. He looked down, reached, felt his leg, and noticed that he could not see his ribs sticking out as they had been becoming so prominent during the last few months.

The End of the Beginning

“What did you do? How...?” Jason asked as he looked into the man’s eyes. Eyes, which said many things but somehow, he knew this person was one he could trust.

“There will be plenty of time to explain everything. Now let us fix those clothes,” Moel said as the man’s clothing changed and was now clean and comfortable. There were even shoes or rather hiking boots on Jason’s feet. Jason watched as the man picked up a piece of concrete and turned back toward him. As he began to hand it to Jason the concrete changed into a loaf of bread. Jason smelled of it and then took a small bite followed by a larger bite as he ate after being nearly starved to death. Then the man handed him a glass of clear water. Where did that come from, he started to think and then remembering the bread, he took the glass in his other hand and drank thirstily. After satisfying his hunger and thirst, Jason could not remember a time in which he had ever felt so content.

“Come with me, there is much work that we have to do right now,” Moel said as he began walking down what was left of the street. Jason followed, still stupefied by what had just happened to him. He could feel the strength in his body increase with each step. His head further cleared as he looked about him at the piles of brick, steel, concrete, and other rubble that once was tall buildings. How strange he thought but he no longer felt afraid and sensed an assurance that with this stranger nearby nothing or nobody could or would harm him.

“Don’t be frightened by what you see or hear. Many things that you think are impossible will happen today. This is a new beginning for the entire world. The King has returned and waits for us in Jerusalem.” Moel said as they walked. In just a few minutes, he stopped beside a pile of rubble.

“I need you to start here removing these stones and other debris. There are six people trapped below in a room. This rubble is blocking the stairway that leads down to them. They will be all right but cannot get out without some help. Consider yourself as drafted in the service of Elohim to help them and others. Just start pulling those beams and chunks of stone off, right here,” he said as he reached down and with one hand lifted off a very large steel I-beam that had been lying in the middle of the rubble.

“Wow, that beam must weigh several thousand pounds and you just lifted it off like it was a piece of straw,” Jason said in amazement.

“The rest is much lighter and you can handle it. I am needed just a little way from here right now and it will be a good exercise for you to clear all this debris away,” Moel said as he began to walk away.

“Please, don’t leave me,” Jason cried out as his fears returned.

“Do not be afraid. I will not be gone very long or be far from here. I will hear you even if you whisper or think that you really need me and be assured that I will not let anything bad happen to you. Close your eyes for a moment...feel that? You will know that I am right beside you always even if you cannot see me,” Moel assured him.

Jason had closed his eyes as he had been told. How strange he thought, he could actually feel something or someone very near him almost touching him. He opened his eyes and Moel was gone. Quickly, he closed his eyes again, and the feeling returned. This time when he opened his eyes, he was not afraid. He looked down at his task and began pulling the material away from the place the strange man had shown him. For some reason, he felt much better as the

The End of the Beginning

sweat began to break out on his body. Soon, he saw the outline of an opening much like what he had crawled out of earlier. Sensing some urgency with this task, he continued to grab pieces of wood and stone and toss them aside. He was startled when a faint voice caught his ear.

“Help us,” the voice called weakly.

The remaining debris was soon moved out of the way exposing a stairway leading down into a dark room. Jason slowly descended the steps. As his eyes became accustomed to the dark, he saw several people huddled against a wall. He heard some moaning and walked toward them stepping gingerly through some empty cardboard boxes and piles of newspaper scattered about on the floor lest there was someone laying in it that he could not see.

“Don’t worry. Help is here and more help is on its way,” he found himself saying in an assured and gentle manner as he drew near. A wiry old man reached up toward him. He took his hands and pulled him up onto his feet. Jason wrapped one arm around him and helped him as they began climbing the stairs toward the sun and pavement above.

He eased the old man down so he could sit on a piece of concrete near the opening. The old man looked up smiling. As his eyes adjusted to the sunlight, they grew very large. He grabbed Jason by his pants leg and began begging, “Where’s your food? You’ve got a lot of meat on your bones so you gotta have some food somewhere! Please, I’m starving, give me some food!”

Jason pulled free from him. He told him to sit there and be quiet. In just a few minutes, he would get some food and all his needs would be taken care of if he stayed put. The old man laid down

and started whimpering as Jason then went back down to bring the others out. Finally, there were six of them sitting or lying about him near the opening. The wiry old man had gotten up and stayed close beside Jason and kept asking about food. Among the group, there were a middle-aged man and woman who clung to each other leaving Jason with the impression they must be married. Jason had carried out a young boy who looked to be about 6 years of age and also lead a young girl who looked to be about twelve up the stairs. Finally, he led another woman who looked to be about thirty something outside into the light. They all looked extremely frail and seemed near exhaustion after climbing up the stairs. Except for the old man, no one was saying anything.

The young boy had awakened when carried into the sunlight but then he and the young girl went back to sleep too weak to take notice of anything. The woman in her thirties seemed to be in a daze and began to cry softly by herself. The couple just sat staring at the ground without saying anything. At first Jason told them not to worry. He began to tell them about the strange man called Moel and tried to get them to talk but soon realized they were either not able or in no mood for conversation except for the old man.

“My name’s George. So where is the help you said was coming? I’m hungry. Where you got your food stashed? You look pretty fit, ain’t missed any meals lately, huh, looks to me like. You can trust me, where’s your survival bunker?” The old man suddenly froze with a look of bewilderment on his face as he looked past Jason, “Well, I’ll be...”

“Looks like you did a great job getting them out,” Moel said as Jason turned to see him coming down the street. Behind Moel came at least a dozen more people and another person dark skinned much like Moel except for long hair and a feminine look and she too glowed slightly like Moel even in the full sunlight. Those walking

The End of the Beginning

with the two wore what looked like new clothes and they walked strong and confident.

“This is Marjah and my name is Moel. We are a team and work together serving the Great Elohim and King in Jerusalem,” Moel told those Jason had brought up from the dark basement room.

The others seemed to surround the group that Jason had helped from the dark chamber below the stairway. Then the two ‘glowing ones’ divided up the six people Jason had rescued so each one had three people to treat. In turn, they placed their hands on each one’s shoulders and looked into their eyes. They would then close their eyes and Jason could see their lips move but heard no words. From their hands, the glow seemed for a brief moment to pass through every part of the person they laid hands on.

What in the world, he thought, rubbing his eyes?

As the six people were healed and restored to a healthy state one could actually see them slowly expanding to normal proportions like balloons blowing up from the virtual living skeletons they had been. As fresh new clothes and shoes began to cover the individuals of the group they seemed to wake up, they stood and looked about in amazement or dread of the unknown.

The old man, George, still had one thing on his mind, “Do you have any food?”

“Surely you can’t be hungry?” a young woman asked as they all realized that after these strange people had touched them, they could not remember ever feeling so well and fit.

“No, but that doesn’t mean I won’t be later,” he responded.

“If it will make you feel better, I’ll give you some food to eat,” Moel said as he picked up a brick. The old man was just about to say something when the brick changed into a loaf of bread. He snatched it with his hands and after smelling it, broke a piece off, and carefully put it into his mouth.

“Oh man,” George smiled and chewed, “I never had anything that tasted this good.”

Marjah assured them all that they would have everything they needed. She and Moel both began to make bread appear from rocks, stones, and bricks they picked up. Marjah picked up a flat piece of drywall and it became a tray with cups of water on it. She went about serving everyone.

Moel began to speak to the group as they enjoyed this new kind of bread, “We are about to go on a journey. You have been captives in this northern country and now you will go to a new homeland to start anew. Finish your food and drink then we will get started.”

After everyone had eaten and drank their fill of fresh water, Moel and Marjah started walking toward the south leading them out from the city and everyone quickly followed them. As they walked through the ruins that lay all around them, nearly all of them opened up and began to talk among themselves and the two children from the group that was in the cellar began to run about with three other children from the other group that had joined them.

Every now and then one after another of them would touch their arm or leg or their head and rub it remembering the pain they had had before the strangers had come. They kept checking to see that it was still okay. Some kept searching ahead and all around them with nervous eyes.

The End of the Beginning

As the sun began to near the horizon, Moel turned from the pathway they were traveling on and headed toward a clump of trees lying just westward of their path. As they neared it, they saw what was left of a barn with scattered fence posts outlining what had once been a farm or ranch or whatever they had called it in this country.

“We will spend the night in the barn,” Moel told them as they came to the structure. “It is sturdy and dry and the straw in the loft will make comfortable beds for everyone.

The children began running about the barn and some climbed up into the loft. The older ones looked about in the various stalls. It was clear that no animals had been kept here for a long time. Groups of men and women started moving some old harnesses and various farm implements outside the barn to make room for sleeping areas. Some men tossed down some clean fresh smelling straw that was then spread out to make beds. All were busy and peaceful until one of the little girls screamed in terror.

“Help, get that snake away from me!” she yelled as she ran from a little boy who was holding it by its tail and chasing her. It was so long it nearly dragged on the loft’s floor as he held it high and taunted the girl with glee. Jason had turned at the ruckus and could hardly believe what his eyes then saw. Marjah who had been near the doorway on the ground in a blink of an eye was now standing on the loft between the boy and girl. With one hand, she reached and took the girl’s hand and with the other, she took hold of the boy’s shoulder.

“Do not be frightened,” she told the girl and after she looked into her eyes the little girl relaxed. Then she turned to the boy and said, “Let me have the snake.”

Everyone had gathered around to see what was going on when a woman yelled out, “Watch out, that snake’s deadly poisonous!” To which several more women began screaming, everyone began to run away, and those on the loft began climbing down the ladder. One man jumped from the loft and as he landed on the ground, he screamed out in pain as one of his legs was bent in an unusual way and the tip of a jagged bone protruded through his pants leg.

“Everyone, stop running! Settled down, and listen to me,” Marjah commanded as Moel appeared beside the man on the ground and instantly healed his broken leg. Then, Marjah spoke out so all could hear her, “Since the King has returned, He has commanded all creatures small and great to again be in full submission to mankind. None will harm even the smallest child no matter how deadly they are or how they have been in the past.” With that, she let the snake wrap around her arm as she gave the little boy a stern look. She then placed the snake on the straw of the loft. It moved about as if looking for somewhere to run and hide. The little girl stepped toward the snake and to the amazement of the rest reached out her hand as the snake raised its head and she patted its head.

“There, there, little fellow,” she spoke softly, “I didn’t mean to be afraid. I guess you are the one that’s really afraid. I won’t hurt you.” She then picked up the snake and carefully carried it to the side of the loft. She placed it on the floor by the wall and watched it crawl through a crack and down the wall to the outside. Then she climbed down the ladder and began running around and playing with the other children. Up in the loft they could see Marjah on her knees talking to the boy and while they could not hear her words, they could see the boy shaking his head with eyes wide first in fear and then smiling as she gave him a hug.

The End of the Beginning

Still, several of the men and women were jumpy as they continued the preparation for places to sleep. Several had gathered about the man who had broken his leg and he had rolled up his pants leg and showed them his leg was just fine and that even the cloth of his pants leg showed no hole where the bone had protruded. Even the blood that had gushed out of the open wound had disappeared from his body and clothing.

There were many questions and comments spoken in whispered voices about what it meant ‘the King has returned.’ Soon, Moel told them not to worry, as there were no more creatures of any kind left inside the barn. He answered all their questions. No, there were no more snakes. No, there were no spiders. No, there were no bugs. Finally, His answers and assurance soothed the fears of all. As it began to darken, they gathered outside the barn around a ring of rocks that some men had placed to make a fire pit. There were several logs piled up but no fire. Moel walked near the pile of wood, looked upward toward the sky, and closed his eyes. Then they heard him say, “Amen” as something glowing came out of the sky. Not dropping down like a shooting star but drifting like a falling leaf. It was a small flame of fire that landed on the wood and immediately caused the logs to burst into flame. Marjah took a pouch, began pulling out loaves of bread, and passed them out. As she rounded the fire, a couple of men on the other side who had been the first to receive some bread gave each other a puzzled look.

“There’s no way she could have that many loaves in that little pouch?” One whispered.

Moel came with another pouch hung by a strap over his shoulder. He began taking out cups, and had a pitcher in his other hand. Where it came from no one had seen. Nevertheless, he went around the circle and soon everyone had a loaf of bread and a cup of water. They ate hungrily and drank from the cup. To their

amazement again, no matter how much they chewed off and swallowed, there was still a large piece of the loaf left in their hand. The same was true of the cup, they never had to ask for a refill, as there was always some water left no matter how long or how much they gulped and swallowed enjoying its pure delicious taste. Soon, everyone's hunger and thirst were assuaged even though a few still nibbled at the bread or just savored the water. All were attentive as Moel began to talk to them.

"Each night as we journey, Marjah and I will tell you about things beyond your wildest dreams. It is a story about a great Elohim who sought to do something that for all others was impossible. It is a story of betrayal, deceit, and war. It is also a story of wonder, faith, and hope. It is a story about the most incredible sacrifice that anyone could ever imagine. Above all, it is a story about love. A love that few mortal men have understood till now and one in which all who will live forever will not only learn about but actually become part of it."

"Can you tell us why these terrible things have been happening? I have lost everyone I ever knew." Carol, the single woman Jason rescued from the cellar said with tears in her eyes.

"I don't know what to believe," Jason added somberly, "It seems like everyone had some kind of idea of why the world has been on the brink of total destruction for years. During the last few years, I've known people from a lot of different religions and they all thought they knew what would happen in the end time and they were all wrong."

"I thought our country was invincible but after the riots and fighting broke out in our cities I guess we were an easy target for others to come and begin taking what we had built during the last couple hundred years," John said. He and his wife Mildred had been

The End of the Beginning

found by Jason in the cellar. “I really thought this was going to be the end of the world when we were taken captive.”

“Yes, so much religious confusion,” his wife, Mildred remarked. “The most outspoken religious groups, you know those who were always spouting off about prophecy, were telling everyone who would listen that a Beast was going to come from Europe along with a great new false religion. As things got worse, they had most everybody looking the wrong direction. The end of the daily grind of ‘business as usual’ and life as we had lived for many years came upon us all by surprise, no one was really telling the truth about it or what to watch for.”

“Is the end of the world really going to happen now? Is this just a short pause before it gets even worse? Are we all going to die?” Jack, a young man who was part of the group Marjah had brought back to Jason’s group asked with dread and fear on his face.

“I have already told you that you have nothing to fear. All the destructive plagues and crazy weather is now past. No one is going to die at least not anytime soon. Every one of you has many, many years of life ahead of you and wonderful experiences that you cannot begin to imagine. It will be as good as the last few years have been bad. In time, you will again see your loved ones,” Moel spoke with comforting words. “Tomorrow will be another day of travel. As you sleep what I tell you will be repeated in your dreams. It will be just like being there and no dream you have ever had will seem as real. You will learn truths so great that humanity including all the greatest and honorable scholars who have lived during the past 6,000 years have only comprehended but a small portion of it. Even as you hear these things, none of you will understand it all. Some will grasp things well in one area but things in other areas will pass right over their heads. So, listen closely, there is much to learn and unlearn.

What you do with what you hear will determine your eternal fate. So, let us begin at the beginning or rather even before the beginning.”

“I once heard a story about a garden where a man and woman did something wrong and that started this whole mess,” George, the wiry old man offered.

“We will get to that but to really begin at the beginning as far as mankind we must go a great deal further back in time, actually before time even began,” began Moel.

For the next two hours, he spoke and walked around the fire before them. Every word he spoke was clear no matter if he was on the other side of the fire. As he spoke his eyes went from one to another and even when he was not even close to them each one felt as if he were talking directly and personally to them. All the men, women, and even the children sat in awestruck attention to every word. Several times as he spoke so intent was Moel that he actually walked through the fire and passing through the logs and fiery blaze as if they were not there coming out on the other side untouched by it and without a hint of fire or smoke on his clothing or glowing body.

In other parts of the world, similar events were taking place at the end of the day portion of each day. The survivors of the Great Tribulation and Day of the Lord began to learn from the spirit beings who now cared and lead them in learning the truth about what and why things had happened from eternity past to the present.

Part Six:

The Millennial Reign of Christ

Chapter 23

Yahweh and Yeshua Discuss Plans

The resurrected and transformed Saints of Elohim would be divided into two groups. While all had proven to Elohim that they would forever be loyal and faithful to Him, there were differences in what they were able to do even as spirit beings. Some had distinguished themselves during many years of faithful service and thereby earned great rewards. They were ‘prepared’ as it were for service in the Holy Realm to a higher degree than others who had learned and actually done far less.

The years they had spent learning, changing, and growing in knowledge and grace and facing trial after trial would be rewarded, as they would be given oversight of the surviving population and of the earth’s regeneration and rebuilding. Some would care for groups from a few to those that would fill a city. There were a few whose faith and works would be rewarded to the extent that they would now care for even areas known in the past as nations. The group of saints that lead all the new kingdoms of the world would be referred to as ‘[the Kings](#)’.

The Apostle John was to be responsible for the entire extended family that was called Ephraim when it dwelled as part of the nation of Israel. This was the most diverse or mixed multitude of all nations that remained. In this group were individuals from the lineage of the very nation that had crossed the river Jordan with Joshua and Caleb. After hundreds of years living as part of the Kingdom of Israel, they joined the other ten tribes to the north of Judah.

They were eventually defeated and were taken captive by the Assyrians. In time, they had overcome and defeated the Assyrians. From that time, they had existed as various groups that migrated east, north, and westward. Finally, they had gathered as several nations

but few had kept their knowledge of their past and their identity as one of the tribes of Israel. Those closest to the bloodline of Ephraim had been taken captive to a northern country during the final days of the Great Tribulation and these were to be returned to their inheritance in the land once known as Israel.

Yet, the vast majority that survived of the tribe of Ephraim would remain or return to North America. The entire northern hemisphere would be their nation. It would encompass an area that extended beyond the boundaries once known as the United States of America. Now it would be known as the United States of the Americas for its boundary went north into all the northern area of what was called Canada and south to include all of the Western Hemisphere to the bottom tip of what had been known as South America.

It was interesting that just as the territory of the original tribe of Ephraim was divided east and west by the Jordan River, the expanded nation of Ephraim's descendants was divided east and west by the Mississippi river in the northern continent and north and south of the Amazon River in the southern continent. Jacob whose name was changed to Israel had prophesied that in the last days shortly before the return of the Christ, Ephraim would be a company or multitude of nations and the USA alone fulfilled that exactly ²³. They became a company or union of a multitude of nations as each of its 'states' were generally larger in population, land area. and wealth than most other nations around the world when formed. At the beginning of the twentieth century, some religious philosophers thought the British Empire was the nation that fulfilled that prophecy concerning the descendants of Ephraim. But history proved it was not as it disintegrated from its peak in the 1800's to a small island nation with little power and resources by the end of the age. It was discovered that some of the English people were actual descendants of Ephraim's older brother, Manasseh.

The End of the Beginning

Of those who came to earth with the Christ, the King of Kings, after the Wedding Supper of the Lamb of Elohim; there were those whose life had earned few or even no rewards. Many of these had been converted during the reign of the Beast power. Those of the first group, the Kings, who had lived during the last days before Yeshua returned, had performed an amazing feat of spreading a witness that resulted in the salvation of many of those in the second group. Those of the second group had sacrificed their lives during the Great Tribulation because having learned essential truths; they in complete faith had fully accepted Yeshua Christ as their Lord and Savior and had received Elohim's Spirit. Their final act that demonstrated their saving faith was refusing the Mark of the Beast trusting in Elohim while their heads were chopped off by a guillotine, sword, or axe. There were a very few who had distinguished themselves far above the rest by their witness and bringing others to salvation and were placed in the first group. However, the overwhelming majority were simply not prepared in life to begin such great challenges as the Kings.

These of the second group would be called '[the Priests](#)'. Their strength lay in uncompromising faith and love for Elohim and those called to Him. Great was their love as they did not flinch or betray their brethren in the face of torture and death. Yet, many had lacked the opportunity to have learned or exercised the use of a many great portions of knowledge of Elohim's truth. During the Marriage Supper of the Lamb having been reborn in spirit form they had been given a 'crash course' of the truths they did not know and would begin the millennium by serving in apprentice-like positions along with the rest of the 'Priests' of Elohim. The Priests would also be sent into the field as it were around the world and spent time with those of the first group, the Kings. The majority of time they would

abide and work in Jerusalem participating in training activities along with worshipping and serving the Great King, Yeshua Christ.

The training of all the remaining human beings left on earth needed exposure to the entirety of absolute truths of Elohim untainted by human error. The adults would be placed in groups of twelve with several regular instructors and special instructors on occasions. Yeshua Christ would also spend time with these groups as they neared the close of each major topic. Lessons would not just be taught classroom style as the topics would be thoroughly examined by seeing many applications of them as they actually took place in past earth history. The entire class would become surrounded by a ‘bubble’ and experience a three-dimensional replay of real events. They would see everything that happened from every angle possible and instant replay of key actions. These students would also be privy to the very thoughts of the individuals that they would see. Members of the Kings from time to time would be able to appear among them also becoming just as enthralled as they observing the events as the Priests and humans. Every born-again Son of Elohim including those of the Kings had much to learn to begin to fully understand all of truths of Elohim. The action could be ‘frozen’ to allow for discussion of key points among the students, teachers, and other observers. These sessions would last for four hours each afternoon broken up into two-hour intervals with recreational activities in between for groups of older children and adult humans.

The mornings would be spent in work activities till the noon meal. There would also be sessions for those reborn of the Spirit but these would be done in ‘spirit time’, which were only a few minutes in physical time. Having these sessions six days a week for a thousand years still would not be long enough to explore all the truths of Elohim and to see Elohim’s hand in everything that happened

The End of the Beginning

from the rebellion of Lucifer, to the creation of Adam, to the coming of Yeshua in the flesh, and finally to the destruction of the Beast. It would be simply amazing for all of Elohim's creation both spirit born Sons of Elohim and those who had survived to be able to have a 'front row seat' to see firsthand everything they had read and heard about in the Bible and in history books and documentaries. As they would learn, Elohim knew that even more questions about other things that they had not even begun to think about would enter their minds. The impact would be virtually like having lived a million different life experiences that would place the truths of Elohim so firmly in their very being they would never doubt or be compromised for all eternity.

.....

Yahweh, Elohim the Father, looked upon the earth from His throne in heaven. All would proceed as He and Yeshua Christ, had planned. It was His intention that all His children would grow in every aspect of being no matter what they had experienced in earthly life. Even those saved by faith with no rewards would eventually be prepared to serve His eternal purpose and plans along with those receiving the greatest rewards. It was interesting to see that in the development of each new Son of Elohim the difference in ability remained much the same. Those who began their new spirit life with greater ability continued to grow along with those of lesser ability and while the span was closing ever so slightly there would always be a difference. Yahweh noticed that Yeshua, who had become His Son, continued His growth as well. He also knew that the span between all the newborn Sons and His First Son would never begin to close. Even now as spirit beings the gap between them and the two great Elohim beings that had inhabited eternity past was so great

there would never be enough time even spirit time for them to ever close the gap.

.....

There came a time that Yeshua was in a meeting with David and several of the Apostles.

“I wonder if any of Our earthly children have the faintest clue about what We have in store for them.” Yah’s thoughts carried to Yeshua as He was listening to a proposal by Peter. Yeshua smiled and shook His head.

“But, Lord, I believe that this is the best alternative,” Peter insisted thinking Yeshua’s shaking of His head showed His disapproval of his proposal.

“Peter, it is a fine idea,” Yeshua laughed at the look on Peter’s face, *“Go right ahead, I completely agree, approved.”*

Peter’s eyebrows remained arched and he shook his head wondering what was going on. Yeshua noticed it and told him, *“I shook my head about another thought that entered my mind not at your proposal, Peter.”*

“Oh,” he responded as a smile returned to his face, “I thought I had overlooked something important.”

“That will be the day, Peter. If anything, you think a task to death with all the details and possibilities and alternatives,” James chimed in.

The End of the Beginning

“Come on, Peter. We’ve got work to do, can’t you see the boss is busy,” Andrew called out laughing.

“All right, Andrew. Knock off the ‘boss’ business or I’ll have you working with Paul again in China,” laughed Yeshua.

“No, anything but China,” Andrew faked a whinny voice barely able to stifle his laughter.

“Anything?” Yeshua asked trying to sound stern while trying to stifle His own laughter as well.

“Actually, China’s not so bad...,” His voice began to fade out as Andrew began to disappear with James. “But, Paul, well...he’s another story.”

“What would John say about...,” Peter was saying lost in his own thoughts as he too vanished.

“Yes, Paul is so focused and demanding most of the time. Still takes someone to calm him down and to relax a bit every once in a while. Reminds me of Elijah,” Yeshua said out loud with David nodding his head in agreement. *“Come on, David. It is time for us to take a break. Let’s go and see our brother Paul.”* Yeshua said as they both vanished in Jerusalem and instantly appeared in China where they found Paul in a deep discussion with a large group of Chinese men. He was talking in fluent Mandarin Chinese that he had never studied or knew before going there. He like other Spirit born Sons of Elohim had the gift of tongues to talk with anyone throughout the world in their own language.

$$\mathcal{R} \text{ of } \mathcal{D}$$

Chapter 24

Civilization Begins Anew

Events just like those recorded of Zekiel and Moel continued to take place in nearly every corner of the earth. Small clusters and lone individuals were startled to see glowing people appear near them. Their bodies and minds were miraculously healed. They gathered with others much like themselves forming small communities. Together they built group shelters and then individual homes. They built workshops, and other buildings to make things they needed for personal and group uses.

Each community began to specialize in certain food items of vegetables, fruit, and livestock as well as manufactured goods to trade with other communities nearby and eventually afar. Roadways were rebuilt but this time the roadbed was actually lanes of grass lined with flowers and shrubs. The spirit beings had already designed many things and helped the people build manufacturing centers to produce them.

For transportation, vehicles would be built that would glide upon a cushion of air connected wirelessly to sensors and controls buried beneath the grass as well as satellite signals that together coordinated everything along the way automatically preventing collisions or accidents involving other vehicles, pedestrians, or animals. A new battery system had been developed and installed to power all vehicles, homes, and buildings. These would be automatically recharged by the sun during the day and would have enough energy to power everything by night, noiselessly and pollution free.

With the power, imagination, and direction of the Kings and Priests of Elohim, the surviving people of the entire earth worked together to clean up the destruction that had taken place during the

Great Tribulation and Day of the Lord and then to begin rebuilding. The changes that needed to be made were as much concerned with the people as the land. For the first time since the tower of Babel, the entire earth began to learn and use only one language to communicate with others. Some thought that the whole world would learn Hebrew or Aramaic but that was not to be. The new language was somewhat like a composite of many languages but elements of past languages like Spanish and English were the most prominent. Its alphabet was phonetic and consisted of 30 sounds represented by 30 letters. Words were written exactly as they sound when spoken. Also, as a first, each word had only one meaning no matter what the context there simply was no variation in what it meant. Everyone was taught using the new language to learn all the truths that were to guide every aspect of their lives. As time passed, they learned to respect, honor others and especially their teachers, and were constantly in awe as they witnessed incredible feats.

The survivors of the end time events ranged in age from 2 to 66. It was sad that the terrible times had been so severe that virtually no infants nor very small children had survived and in fact, during the last few years practically no babies had been born. Most women who had conceived had miscarried due to the extreme physical ordeal their bodies sustained. Of the babies born during the final years of the End Time, most died within a few months sparing them from the 'hell on earth' experienced by mankind in general. The very few small children who were less than 5 years of age were mostly in families who had parents or others with Elohim's Spirit looking out for them and were supernaturally protected by Elohim's angels²⁴. Virtually every person above the age of 66 and those with a serious and debilitating mental or physical impairment had also perished. All the survivors had been fully restored to a normal mental and physical condition by the Spirit born Sons of Elohim by

The End of the Beginning

the power of the Holy Spirit as they were relocated to the areas where they would build new communities.

The physical restoration of each individual made these survivors including those near 66, feel as if they were in their mid-twenties, full of vim and vigor to face the challenges of building a new world with infrastructure, housing, and industrial complexes that would not be fully utilized until after the millennial reign of Yeshua Christ on the earth.

While most groups around the world stayed fairly close to where they were found, some were being brought back to the surrounding countryside of Jerusalem within the borders of the ancient nation of Israel under Kings David and Solomon. There were hundreds of groups like the one lead by Moel and Marjah making their way from the north. Those being brought back to Jerusalem learned that they were actually direct descendants of the twelve tribes of Israel. The ten northern tribes were thought lost after being carried into captivity from their ancient homes in Palestine but descendants of all twelve had survived and were found and some were being brought back to their ancient homeland.

Some of these groups began crossing the path of others as they journeyed toward their new homeland. These were already being gathered by other spirit beings and were beginning to learn the reason for what had happened over the last few years. They were also amazed that they were blood linked to the original twelve tribes of Israel and began to learn which tribes they were to be part of. The number of those settling in the new nation of Israel was 144,000 not counting those of the tribe of Levi who like in the original settlement of the Promise Land were not given any land but were dispersed among the other twelve tribes. The tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh rounded out the twelve separate tribes of Israel who were given land and cities to settle in.

.....

During his journey to Jerusalem, after joining with another group of travelers, Jason recognized a couple of men who had been guards where he had been held prisoner before the last great earthquake. After a couple of days, He slowly worked his way near them and finally was able to speak to them trying to find out what had happened to them. He remembered these two well, as they were not like the other guards. He found out that they had never taken the Mark of the Beast. They secretly cared about the captives and would slip them extra food from their own rations and did not beat them with the same intensity as the others. They had to make a show of being harsh but their lashes made a lot of noise but did not cut into the backs of those being tortured nor bruise them as badly.

It took a while for them to recognize Jason as he looked like a totally different person now that he was well nourished and was dressed in decent clothing. They were at first shocked and then somewhat fearful as they fell at Jason's feet and began to beg his forgiveness with tears in their eyes. They tried to explain that they had been forced to do what they did to him and others they had to guard. Jason learned that they had heard from some captives about the return of the Christ and though they were not able to learn much they hoped for some great power from above to step in and save the world from the madness and evil that was about to destroy every living thing on the face of the earth.

Finally, Moel and Marjah arrived with their group at Jerusalem. The travelers were awed by the large beautiful buildings, parks, and wide thoroughfares.

The End of the Beginning

“These buildings and the entire city of Jerusalem is so incredible, words cannot begin to adequately describe them,” Jason observed to Moel.

“What you see here in this earthly city of Jerusalem hardly compares with the New Jerusalem,” he replied.

“Where is that city?” Jason asked.

“It is out there,” Moel answered as he pointed upward toward the heavens, “It will be coming here to earth one day. Only those who have been accounted worthy to be changed to spirit will see it.”

“I want to see it,” Jason responded, “I will learn and do whatever it takes to become part of Elohim’s Kingdom. I wish I had known what you spirit beings knew in your earthly life. I would have been with you resisting the evil forces that tried to conquer the world.”

“Those evil forces almost did,” Moel, confirmed. “If Yeshua had not intervened every person would have either been part of it or put to death for resisting. Eventually they would have destroyed every living person including themselves on earth. The destructive forces they were about to unleash had reached a point that if they had used them; the earth itself would have violently exploded and ceased to exist along with the population. Yeshua intervened just in time to stop it. Jason, Elohim spared your life so you could have a chance. This is your one chance. I’m sure you will make the most of it. It all starts and ends with acceptance of and faith in the Savior, Yeshua Christ, the Son of Yahweh.”

Chapter 25

Establishing True Religious Practices

One of the primary focus' during the Millennium was the conversion of those who had lived through and survived the end of the age so they would truly accept Yeshua Christ as their personal Savior and fully follow the way of Elohim. These would be transformed to Spirit during a special meeting in Jerusalem every fifty years called the Jubilee Year.

Once Yahweh was completely satisfied that by faith these survivors would serve only Him for all of eternity these would assemble at the Temple from every corner of the world for this very special occasion.

One would think that after living through such horrible events all would readily accept anything they were told by those who had saved their lives. Yet, there were still some who clung to old ideals and were a challenge to the Saints of Elohim. Those still living in the far east nations in the area where the central nation was known as China and the northern countries once combined as the Soviet Union as well as areas about Asia Minor and the Middle East were proving to be quite difficult in changing from their old ways and religions while learning and accepting Yeshua as the Christ, the Messiah, and conforming to Elohim's way of life.

Of all the inhabitants of the earth before the great and terrible Day of the Lord, barely ten percent had somehow survived. Only a few hundred million human beings clung to life as billions had perished. About one third had died during the wars; another third by the pestilence and diseases; and the final third had been killed by the destructive wrath poured out by Elohim's angels.

None who had taken the Mark of the Beast were left alive having been killed at the battle of Armageddon. Those who had

taken the Mark of the Beast and had not been part of the army killed at Armageddon had been rounded up by angels and brought before the King. They were quickly judged and then thrown into the lake of fire. All those who had taken the Mark fully knew they were rejecting Elohim for all eternity. They were incorrigible having been filled with the fullness of Satan's lies and deceit and who had enjoyed and thrived in practicing evil ungodly behavior during their last few years on earth. There was no hope to convert them and they reaped what they sowed and were cast into a blazing inferno where unbelievable pain was their reward. Their souls suffered in a spirit form Elohim had given them until the time for the Final Judgment.

.....

The world had undergone radical changes during the final phase as the wrath of Elohim had been poured out upon the earth. Right after Yeshua's return, the axis of the earth had been shifted and both hemispheres began to experience very pleasant and mild weather as a magnetic barrier in the stratosphere blocked damaging rays from the sun and actually refocused the sun's rays from the equator to the Polar Regions so all the world experienced similar weather conditions. After all the incredible turbulent weather of the tribulation, there were no storms that raged anywhere on earth.

The orbit of the moon had also changed. It now circled the earth in exactly 28 days. When the moon showed its first crescent after being completely blocked by the earth from the sun's rays in the dawning skies over Jerusalem, this became the signal for a new month to begin at sunrise the following day.

The orbit of the earth about the sun had altered to an elliptical path much like the shape of an egg. About half of the year the climate was moderate and for one fourth of the orbit the earth was closest to the sun and was warmer while the remaining fourth was

The End of the Beginning

further from the sun, as it began to move toward its 'pointed' arch the weather cooled down. This resulted in the whole world experiencing changing seasons. The earth's orbit around the sun had also sped up a little and now would take exactly 336 days to circle the sun.

New calendars were being made in Jerusalem for distribution to everyone on the earth. The first month would begin in the spring. All twelve months would have exactly 28 days. Each month was divided into four seven-day weeks. Each new day began at sunrise and lasted for exactly 24 hours ending as the next sunrise began a new day. There were 12 hours of daylight and 12 hours of nighttime. The outer ranges of the atmosphere diffused the light of the sun so that even near the north and south poles there were twelve hours of daylight and twelve hours of nighttime each day no matter what the season.

There were a few who had lived in the far north that had survived and they told stories about how during the summer months the sun hardly set. There was about 22 hours of sunlight and a couple of hours of twilight. Then, during the winter, it was nighttime all day except for a couple of hours of twilight. These hardly recognized the land that had been Alaska and northern Canada as the snow and ice as well as cold was now completely gone. At any time of the year, a ship could sail across what had been the arctic on a path that had been sought for thousands of years called the Northwest Passage.

With the return of the King of Kings, Jerusalem had become the first city of the world. Each new day for the entire planet began with sunrise on this city. The International Date Line in the Pacific Ocean was formally changed to run along the Mediterranean coast of Palestine approximately due north and south. The entire world had two times that all knew, Jerusalem time and local time. Observances at each location were done so at local time yet everyone was somewhat conscious of what was happening at Jerusalem at any time day or night.

Meetings and activities in the Temple of Yeshua in Jerusalem, generally went on twenty-four hours a day of the earth's revolution six days a week. When the sun rose on the seventh day of the week in Jerusalem and in every other city of the world everything was different. No business, work, planning, or meetings as such were going on anywhere in Jerusalem or any other city. This was a day to be filled with song and joyful praises in Jerusalem and throughout the world as the Sabbath was observed. Beautiful music seemed to flow about as a soft breeze. Angelic choirs could be heard around the earth as the sun rose from place to place announcing the beginning of the Sabbath. All work had stopped and this was a day of rest and refreshing peace and joy for all.

The seventh day after the return of the King was declared as the weekly Sabbath which was to be a day of rest and worship for all peoples to be repeated each week. The mornings of each Sabbath began with personal worship and private study and meditation. The parents with children spent time together talking and discussing the way of Elohim.

Gatherings for worship services were generally held at 10:00 AM local time and consisted of groups up to 120 people of all ages at one of the homes of the Spirit leaders in their area. While every Son of Elohim had a mansion in the New Jerusalem in heaven above, they also had homes in the area where they served as King or Priest of Elohim. Their duty was to teach and help mortals learn the great truths of Elohim as well as develop productive and rewarding lives and careers. Work was balanced with family and social involvement and activities. Each individual was personally guided, helped, and encouraged in all aspects of life.

Immediately, after the weekly Sabbath service all enjoyed a meal prepared and served by the Spirit beings so no one had to prepare such meals for the Sabbath day. The homes of the Spirit born Sons of Elohim each had a large banquet room that served for

The End of the Beginning

gatherings in which services were held and were also used for the weekly meal.

Sometimes they would gather in an outdoor pavilion when the weather was especially comfortable. This gave all an extended time to become more acquainted with others. Each person was shown by angels to a place to sit at a table for the meal. Each week all were seated with different people around them so all eventually became well known to each other.

Each afternoon and evening were times of fellowship and visitation of smaller groups together. No one was left out. There were times when the various age groups separated to enjoy activities tailored to their interests and times when all joined together, young and old, to enjoy activities that brought joy and laughter to all.

The Sabbath was not a day full of restrictions and long drawn out congregational services some had heard or experienced years before Christ returned. It was truly a day to rejoice and visit with friends and family as well as invite strangers to share with them in their joy.

The calendar also noted the times of celebration throughout the year. All the holidays celebrated by various nations before Christ's return were no longer recognized with few exceptions. The calendar drew from passages in the Old Testament Bible, the 23rd chapter of Leviticus. This chapter began:

¹And the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, ²“Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: ‘The feasts of the Lord, which you shall proclaim to be holy convocations, these are My feasts. (Leviticus 23:1,2 NKJV)

Few Christians had ever read and understood that from the beginning Elohim had proclaimed to the world that these were His Feasts not just for the nation of Israel or the Jews as most modern-

day Christian theologians had believed. Even the establishment of the weekly Sabbath begun on the seventh day of creation and was also contained in this portion of the book of Leviticus completely independently of the Ten Commandments. Perhaps this was another reminder to ‘*Remember the Sabbath day to keep it holy*’. Elohim tried to keep those who would come to Him in faith mindful to strive to maintain their relationship strong.

The weekly seventh day Sabbath was to continually remind mankind of their Elohim who was the Creator of all things. Before Yeshua’s return, those who had kept the seven-day cycle had been blessed regardless of which actual day of the week they actually kept the Sabbath. On His return to earth, King of Kings, Yeshua had reestablished the exact seventh day of each week for the weekly Sabbath for everyone to keep together and then He began to reestablish the proper days and manner to keep ‘*His*’ Annual Feast days since He had rebuilt the Temple in Jerusalem.

There would be **7 annual days of celebration called ‘Feast days’ in the Bible**. On days mentioned in scripture in which a ‘*holy convocation*’ was to occur everyone in the entire town met at the home of the Sons of Elohim that were in charge of their town like they did on the weekly Sabbath. The first two occurred in the spring.

The First Annual Celebration was called the Passover and it commemorated the sacrifice King Yeshua paid in dying in order to pay the debt of sin for all of mankind and bring about the redemption of man to his Elohim. This was to be held on the 14th day of the first month of the year.

The Second Annual Celebration immediately followed the first and was a seven-day festival during which all the inhabitants were not to eat any bread type foods that had a leavening agent added to cause it to rise or puff up by chemical reaction. Some ingredients caused baked goods to puff up because they were full of air. These were not true leavening ingredients so they were allowed. Just

The End of the Beginning

before this week, everyone prepared for this celebration by cleaning their homes to remove leavening agents such as yeast used in baking as well as any bread or crumbs that contained leavening. Families made a game out of this activity as children searched for crumbs of leavened bread and received rewards for their finds.

During the week of celebration, if anyone found any leavened bread that had been missed; they would immediately take it out of their homes and dispose of it. Initially, everyone was curious and wanted to know why this was required. The Spirit Sons of Elohim explained to them in groups and individually that this was to teach them to search their lives to see if there was anything they were thinking, saying, and doing that was not right. Besides removing the leavened products, they were also instructed to eat some unleavened bread every day. They were told this was to teach them that every day they needed to read and hear teachings from Elohim's Word and add more of the truths of Elohim in their way of thinking, speaking, and actions. On the first day and seventh day of the Days of Unleavened Bread there were holy convocations wherein the people meet at the home of the King or Priest of Yahweh for services like they did on each Sabbath day.

The Third Annual Celebration came just as summer was about to begin, in the third month on the fifteenth day the third Annual celebration took place. It had been tied in with an event that took place during the second celebration. Beginning the next weekly Sabbath day after the weekly Sabbath during the Feast of unleavened bread, one would count seven Sabbath days which totaled 49 days and the next day, Sunday would total fifty days. In that way, they would '*count fifty*' (the meaning for the name Pentecost) days and they would land on this day for the third celebration to take place. Before the return of Christ, people had to actually calculate when it would occur by counting seven weekly Sabbaths and arrive at the day after the seventh Sabbath to keep it. The Holy Spirit was openly

given to the whole world shortly after Christ was resurrected and returned to the Father. Many called Pentecost the birthday of the Christian Church.

Conversion and Salvation was a process involving steps. First, one needed to accept Yeshua Christ as their Savior (the Feast of the Passover). Second, one needed to repent or in other words remove any type of sinful behavior from their life and then take in from the Word of Elohim, knowledge of Elohim's truth so they knew how to live a godly life (the Feast of the Days of Unleavened Bread). Third, one needed the indwelling presence of The Holy Spirit. This also begot them as children of Elohim ultimately to be actually born into the family of Elohim as Spirit beings (the Feast of Pentecost).

Pentecost also recognized that a small number of individuals called the first fruits of Elohim's plan of salvation would be called prior to the first resurrection that would take place when Christ returned to earth. One of the reasons this day had to be determined each year in the past was to teach mankind that the day of Christ second coming was not known by any but the Father and all needed to remain prepared and ready for this day. The first resurrection would be much smaller harvest of souls than the number of those harvested in the second resurrection that would happen after the 1,000-year millennial reign of Christ on the earth.

The Fourth Annual Celebration took place in the fall season on the first day of the seventh month. It began with the blowing of Trumpets commemorating the day that Yeshua Christ returned to earth as King of Kings, and Lord of Lords (the Feast of Trumpets).

On these days, the weather was just perfect and even clouds shaded the activities from becoming too warm. Starting two hours before noon there were parades with bands and everyone would line the street of their community and then join in following the band to the central park where all would find spots to sit on large handmade quilts on the ground surrounding a pavilion where the Sons of Elohim would teach them great truths of Elohim.

The End of the Beginning

From time to time, the people would stand and sing spiritual songs accompanied with angelic choirs to praise and worship Elohim. After the service, angels appeared at each quilt and set a picnic basket down full of wonderful food, drink, and desserts. Everyone joined in with families on surrounding quilts sharing their baskets and engaged in lively conversations.

As the evening came, they all joined in sing-a-longs as well as listen to talented singers and players of musical instruments of their community. As the sun went down, lights appeared in the trees in the park and about the pavilion providing an atmosphere that was what mankind called magical or enchanting in days long before the end time. There would be soft and relaxing music in which couples slowly danced swirling around and moving to the music as others watched and gaily chatted.

The Fifth Annual Celebration took place on the 10th day of the seventh month (the Feast of the Day of Atonement). It was quite different from the rest. On this day, all were instructed to go the entire twenty-four-hour day without food or drink. This fast was begun at sunset on the ninth day and ended at sunset on the tenth day. This was a sober day. There were no joyous activities or merriment or large gatherings at the home of the Son of Elohim Leader for their group. Groups of up to 120 gathered for a short meeting at noontime in one of many community buildings scattered about the city that was within a short walking distance from their homes. During this service, they were told about Satan's fall and his efforts to destroy Elohim's creation and mankind. It was pointed out that it was Satan's influence and deceit that lead human nature to rebel against Elohim and that all of mankind's sins were ultimately laid on Satan. Each individual meditated, prayed, and studied Elohim's Word privately throughout the rest of the day intent on insuring that they would remain loyal to Elohim and fight against Satan's evil with their whole being for all of eternity.

The Sixth Annual Celebration began on the 15th day of the 7th month and lasted for seven days. This came right after the world brought in its annual large harvest of fruits and grains. This symbolized the harvest of souls that took place in the first resurrection at Christ's return. Following Elohim's Plan, Christ would return, Satan would be bound, and then Christ would 'tabernacle' or abide, with man on earth.

This Annual sixth celebration was called the Feast of Tabernacles. Everyone built small shelters in the front of their homes and spent seven days actually 'camped out' in these shelters. Buildings, streets, homes, and parks were decorated with beautiful displays and bright colorful lights that made each evening an incredible experience as families would walk or travel about the city to see the sights.

During this time, work was suspended so all could spend the entire feast in activities for families, adults, and children to enjoy each day. This Feast was so special that several cities would join together to celebrate it. Individuals and families that traveled to this location were temporarily housed in camps prepared in front of the numerous empty homes built to accommodate people who would be raised to physical life in the second resurrection.

From every nation on earth, representatives came to Jerusalem to pay homage to and worship the King of Kings. It had been revealed to the world that Yeshua Christ was actually born during this annual festival. How fitting that while it was called the 'Feast of Tabernacles' it was during this time that Yeshua began to 'tabernacle', which means 'habitation', with mankind in human form during His first coming²⁵. The entire world praised Elohim and sang wonderful hymns composed over the years related to the birth of Christ. Many remembered from the past this event being celebrated in the midst of winter and called Christmas. Sadly, it was totally mixed up with all kinds of myths and even some pagan practices.

The End of the Beginning

From this past celebration of Yeshua birth, everyone enjoyed the giving of gifts to others especially to children. Elohim always encouraged giving to others so everyone planned and each day they would give gifts to children and others. The children really like this over what they had been told were past tradition that occurred as people had celebrated the birth of Christ during the winter solstice.

Make-believe and fantasy stories and concepts were very appealing to nearly all children and many adults and really were just a lot of fun. Because of Christian ignorance, Elohim had ‘winked’ at their errors and had not held them accountable for the sin of getting involved in some pagan practices that were mixed with their celebration of Yeshua birth and even His death. But, now as Yeshua Christ reigned over all the earth it was time to stop wrong and ignorant practices and for all to worship Elohim in Spirit and in Truth.

22 Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. 23 For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you. 24 Elohim that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; 25 Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; 26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; 27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one

of us: ²⁸For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. ²⁹Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of Elohim, we ought not to think that the godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. ³⁰And the times of this ignorance Elohim winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: ³¹Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. Acts 17:22 - 31 KJV

Free of pagan traditions attached to celebrating the birth of Christ in years past; now, everyone could celebrate His birthday in Spirit and in Truth. An additional bonus for children was that they experienced seven days of receiving gifts instead of just one along with the beautiful decorations that could be enjoyed in the fall instead of the dead of winter. Joyful celebrations continued for seven days as everyone joined with others in their communities and some even traveled to other communities to celebrate this time by feasting, singing, giving each other gifts, and telling each other of their life experiences.

On the first day, there was an assembly like the weekly seventh day Sabbath and followed much the same format. Only during this occasion individuals, they had read about in the Bible like Daniel, John the Baptist, Isaiah, Moses, Elijah, and others would actually appear and talk with them as a group and as individuals. This celebration that took place in the fall after harvest time around the world also pictured the harvest of souls reaped after Yeshua Christ returned to earth and during the millennium.

The End of the Beginning

Most people were shocked to realize that the timing of the actual seventh month of the year in Elohim's calendar that fell in the fall had been right there in front of them their whole lives. The base of each month from September to December was defined as a number and had no reference to any Roman emperor or god of mythology. 'Sept' is defined as 'seven' just as 'Oct' defines 8, 'Nov' defines 9, and 'Dec' defines 10, all corresponding to Elohim's new calendar months. Elohim had caused this to remain in all calendars to allow those who studied the Laws He wrote in the Old Testament to be understood and followed as applicable.

Long before the End of Days began some religious groups began to try and keep the Holy Days and have large gatherings at vacation places around the world. They were ignorant of the requirement of keeping them at the Temple in Jerusalem where Yahweh had placed His name during the reign of Solomon. With the destruction of the Temple in 70 A.D. no one could correctly keep the Annual Holy Days. Now with the Temple rebuilt in Jerusalem at the return of Yeshua, all the world could correctly keep the Annual Holy Days again.

Finally, on **the Eighth Annual Celebration** that followed the seven days of the Feast of Tabernacle's celebration another great and final celebration of the year was enjoyed (the Feast of the Last Great Day).

This day was different from all the others. Its theme was about something that was yet to happen. It was about all those who would come up in the second resurrection and be given their first chance for salvation as prophesied as the Great White Throne Judgment in the book of Revelation chapter 20. This truly would be the greatest harvest of souls for Christ the world had ever seen. These were the ones who would populate the cities they were building.

Everyone rejoiced and feasted with thanksgiving for being alive and seeing the goodness of Elohim that was so great their memories

of the past trials and hardships slowly faded. After a noon service groups went to the houses and buildings, they were constructing for those coming back alive in the second resurrection. Then they would gather for a final great banquet afterwards everyone returned to their homes.

After a number of years when some mortals were given the responsibility to rule a nation some of these rulers in certain Middle Eastern countries began to resist conforming to the teachings of Elohim. To test Elohim's will, the rulers of Egypt refused to send ambassadors to Jerusalem during the Feast of Tabernacles while sympathetic rulers of several other neighboring nations sat back to see what would happen.

Immediately after the rest of the world observed the Feast of Tabernacles, from border to border, Egypt and the surrounding nations who also did not send representatives to Jerusalem began to experience a very severe drought. Not only was there no rain upon any parcel of the land within their borders; every source of water from springs to rivers went dry upon their entire country for the entire year. Even the mighty Nile River stopped flowing into the land of Egypt, its waters vaporizing into the air at the point of entering Egypt's border. If the Saints had not provided water for them to drink, the entire population would have all died. From young to old every person protested what the rulers had done and demanded those responsible be replaced.

The replacement rulers as well as rulers of neighboring countries had learned their lesson. From this time onward, they were very humble, and lead their nations in fasting and praying for Elohim's forgiveness and mercy throughout the remainder of the year of drought. At the next Feast of Tabernacles, almost the entire nation of Egypt and all the rulers of the nations nearby traveled to Jerusalem to keep the Feast hoping that none would be punished again for disobeying Elohim.

The End of the Beginning

As the people of Egypt returned home after the Feast, a light rain began to fall and all the people danced and rejoiced. The cycle of rain in due season returned as a reward for obeying Elohim. They waded through the Nile River, which slowly began to flow again. As the last traveler crossed over and reached the banks, a rushing tide came crashing and overflowed onto the land. The ground was so dry it sucked up the water preventing anyone from drowning as it spread over lands used for crops during the growing cycle.

16**And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles. **17**And it shall be, that whoso will not come up of all the families of the earth unto Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain. **18**And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, that have no rain; there shall be the plague, wherewith the LORD will smite the heathen that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. **19**This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all nations that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. **Zechariah 14:16 - 19 KJV

Chapter 26

Daily Life

Schools were set up in every community to begin educating everyone. These were not just for basic educational subjects but included daily lessons of the true laws and way of Elohim. These were also not just for children but adults of all ages. The Kings and Priests of Elohim were the main educators and some 'human' individuals were integrated into the field of education as well.

The Bible was present in every classroom and each session began with a short prayer and a scripture reading. All classes were taught in the new language of earth that was a mix of Spanish and English, 30 sounds, and words with only one meaning.

Lessons in the 'three R's', 'reading', 'riting', and 'rithmetic', were basic core classes with history, science, geography, physics, chemistry, economics, business, social studies, and more were integrated to apply the basic skills.

Various shop classes (building and repairing, mechanical, and electrical systems), crafts, and homemaking and child care skills rounded out main lessons. There were also elective subjects such as various ancient languages such as Spanish, English, German, Russian, Chinese, Japanese, Greek, Aramaic and Hebrew along with other subjects that interested the students.

Classrooms were organized for various groups and each person advanced at their own individual rate. It was finally recognized that children learn at different rates. No one was advanced simply to keep age groups together even though the age of most groups were within a year or two of each other.

Small groups, cliques, of common interest were generally all composed of those with varying skin pigment, height, weight, and other distinguishing outward appearances. Most included boys and

girls but some were exclusively boys or exclusively girls because of the specific interest. Boys liked building and making things like tree houses while girls like sewing and cooking. There were exceptions and all were allowed to develop their creative abilities and aptitudes.

All higher-level schools' junior high grades 6 to 8 and senior high school grades 9 to 12 had an hour of physical activities and sports like hiking, exploring, and a variety of indoor and outdoor sporting activities such as softball, basketball, touch or flag football, soccer, archery, badminton, bowling, tennis, and track and field, and swimming just to name a few.

In elementary schools' grades kindergarten to 5, classrooms dismissed for recess after two periods and then had two more periods and another recess and then their final two periods of classes. During recess all the children ran, jumped, and played various games burning off their excessive energy and helping to develop their bodies as the classroom subjects developed their minds. After each recess, the children were ready to focus and continue learning in the classrooms.

Adults were involved in educational endeavors as well as children. However, adults spent less time in classrooms and more time as apprentices in workshops, business operations, and manufacturing. They were put on a fast track especially for subjects that developed skills to begin the redevelopment of civilization such as building, manufacturing, raw material mining and refining, various other industries, and perhaps the most important of all, agriculture and food production.

These elements of a thriving civilization were unencumbered by unnecessary regulations. The Kings and Priests taught everyone how to develop the economy using godly guidelines so no pollution or waste of resources took place. Everyone from top positions of administration and supervision to lowest skill level workers all shared in the prosperity of each enterprise.

The End of the Beginning

Initially, there were no governmental or high-level management positions for any humans as all such functions were staffed by the Sons of Elohim assisted by angels. Gradually, during the one-thousand-year Millennial Reign of Christ, some mortals displayed the needed aptitude and ability to be appointed to positions of management in industry or coordinating trade between the various parts of the new nations throughout the world.

There were no ‘elections’ as only Elohim could know the intent of each person as well as their abilities and interests. Leadership positions rotated every seven years just like all job functions in business, industry, manufacturing, and agriculture. No one was ever stuck in an endless routine for most of their lives like what happened up to a few years before Yeshua returned.

During the millennium, there were two distinct groups of people. This had nothing to do with race or any other manmade system to discriminate against others because of prejudices. The first class was composed of those who were old enough to know and choose between right and wrong and who had survived the tribulation and lived to see Christ return. As the years went by many of these made the choice, fully accepted Elohim’s grace, and proved they would always be faithful to Elohim. After receiving His Spirit and during the Feast of Tabernacles during the Jubilee Year (every 50 years after the Second Coming of Jesus [Yeshua] Christ) they were transformed to spirit beings like the Sons of Elohim.

However, some survivors hesitated in accepting Christ as Lord and Savior. These always seemed to have some kind of excuse and continually lived on the border of rebellion against the way of life the Sons of Elohim taught from the Holy Scriptures. These joined the ranks of the second class which otherwise was composed of those who had been little children and those infants and children who did

not have a normal brain who were resurrected to a physical mortal life.

Those who began life as infants or young people of two years of age in this second class were not changed to Spirit during these 1000 years even if they were given The Holy Spirit because they had never been directly tested by Satan. Most did not stop to think or wonder about this difference, as life for everyone was incredibly grand, fulfilling, and wonderful in every way.

Everyone who lived seemed to stop aging physically in his or her mid-forties. Even those who were older at the start of the Millennium seemed to grow younger until they too looked like they were in their mid-forties. The babies that were given to couples from Jerusalem to rear as their own matured, eventually married, and went on to receive babies or young children from Jerusalem themselves. All reached their mid-forties and stopped growing older.

In their own mind's eye, everyone saw others who were their senior as older and those junior as younger. This was the result of there being no sickness caused by malnutrition or consuming things that should not be eaten. Everyone's daily life included the proper amount of physical activity to keep his or her bodies in peak physical condition as well.

Anyone who was injured cried out to Elohim for help and a Son of Elohim came to him or her. They were counseled about what took place so that the person could learn to be more careful. Usually the person was healed by a Son of Elohim as the Holy Spirit flowed through them into the injured person. Still, some were left to learn the hard way to be more careful as they had to suffer a slow and painful recovery.

In every corner of the earth, the inhabitants labored long and hard building cities with houses, public buildings, factories, and recreation areas. The new cities were quite different from those of

The End of the Beginning

the past. Cities were designed and built like wheels with spokes. They were spaced out across the land so that open natural areas separated the cities from each other far different from the sprawling mega-cities prior to the return of Christ where one city overflowed into surrounding cities housing millions of people. The new cities made room for eventual populations of tens of billions of people in the second resurrection.

As the land was reclaimed from the uninhabitable desserts, swamps, and other terrain there was room for both cities and countryside for agriculture, industry, and natural scenic areas. Some mountain ranges were terraced so cities could be developed there. Most of the structures were blended in with the terrain so that looking out from large windows in residential areas; individuals would hardly see other residences in a landscape of hills and valleys while manmade objects were hidden.

At the center of each city were public buildings where people could visit the human and Sons of Elohim leaders of the community and go to meeting halls in which meetings and other group assemblies took place instead of the private homes of the Sons of Elohim as was done at the beginning of the Millennial reign of Yeshua. Roadways and pathways for human traffic were grassy greenways with various colors that were firm but not hard. There were no poles or lines above ground for power or communications.

Factories were built and manned by both men and women who did not have any children at home to care for. Some of these factories produced incredible new solar rechargeable battery systems that would provide the energy needed to power all vehicles, equipment, and devices. In other locations, other factories were built and people trained to build new vehicles and many new devices used for communications, entertainment, and household appliances and other

devices to make life more enjoyable. Individuals quickly sought one device that looked like a small wristwatch that allowed them to communicate with others visually as well as audibly. These were miniatures like smart phones that people used just before the end time began. The face on this small featherweight device could be expanded to the size of a paperback book for viewing and then reduced back to its small size with a simple voice command. This helped families and friends keep in touch as well as coordinate activities.

Throughout the Millennium, single men and single women found their ideal mate and were married. They moved from large dormitories that separately housed unattached men and women to one of the newly built houses. The major difference in life during the Millennium from the past was there being no children born after the return of Christ. To compensate for this when couples were ready to have a family, they adopted children who had been kept in Jerusalem. Depending on the desire of married couples, each received at least two to four children over time and those with the temperament and proper training were allowed up to twelve children. Some couples did not desire to raise any children on their own and this was their choice. This was acceptable and they were not stigmatized by others.

When a couple decided on having a family with children, the wife would no longer work outside the home or actively pursue her career while the children were small as her primary concern was the care of the children. She received assistance from angels and Saints in the care of children as well as household duties. This allowed her to take an active role in other activities during a few hours each day so she could interact with other adults. When all the children reached school age, the mother was able to spend more time outside of the house and even pursue her chosen career again on a limited schedule

The End of the Beginning

while the children were in school. The husband's work place was always close enough to home so he could occasionally eat his noonday meal with his spouse and young children.

After work, a couple of times a week, families would get together with neighbors for cookouts and other recreational activities. The first week and the third week of each month there were team activities. During the first day of the first and third week, there were activities that whole families participated in together in some kind of friendly competition. During the second day, all the neighborhood families watched events involving just the fathers and older sons. During the third day, the families watched events involving just the mothers and older daughters. During the fourth day, the younger children were engaged while the adults and older children watched. On the fifth day, the adults were engaged while the children watched. On the sixth day, families spent the evening on their own doing things as a family without others being present. No one was overloaded with household chores or workplace responsibilities that took away from enjoying family life throughout each day, each week, and each month.

All structures were built of materials that could last for several thousand years. New metals and preservatives for wood were developed that were impervious to weather conditions and insect infestation. A new material combined cement, various metals, fiberglass, and new polymers that could be shaped and colored to look like wood, stone, tile, marble, and other surfaces. These were used to build houses that varied in architecturally sound and aesthetically pleasing shapes with walls and roofing that did not deteriorate at all over the years. To ensure that all houses that were built during the thousand years were free of any problems, families moved every seven years to a new house that had been built and fully furnished. The number of houses greatly increased beyond the needs

of those living at this time. It seemed an almost impossible task to build the billions of homes that would be needed to house all those who would come up in the second resurrection following the Millennium.

As the years went by people were able make use of mass transit system to travel about their communities which grew into cities. Most of the routes of the mass transit systems were what large city people had called subways that were under the greenways with hubs that brought passengers up to ground level. They were constructed using large automated tunneling machines that continuously dug the tunnels, removed the dirt and rock, and installed steel reinforced concrete walls. Through the use of mirrors, those who rode passenger units would see above the ground level. Passenger units were controlled in operation centers near the center of towns. In time, they were able to make use of individual ‘cars’ and ‘trucks’ that glided on a cushion of air above the green ways. While these could be somewhat independently directed by ‘drivers’ their movement was coordinated by a control system that maintained their movement in respect to all other vehicles, pedestrians, and objects along their path. There simply were no accidents or injuries involving these systems as drivers were assisted in their voyage to their destination.

As decades passed, mass transportation systems continued to develop into efficient systems for all to make use of when traveling between destinations that were farther apart such as town-to-town. While most families stayed where they had been placed initially, they all enjoyed traveling to other locations to see the sights and to make new friends and acquaintances.

Travel from one city to another city on the same continent eventually was done using underground trains when a person wanted to travel quickly. Such trains were controlled by a computer system

The End of the Beginning

and reached speeds of over 3,000 miles per hour. Most of these ‘trains’ were composed of individual large capsules, each holding one to two dozen passengers and floated on a cushion of air in tubes. Up to twelve capsules could be linked together. There were passages between separate capsules like that of passenger cars on trains of old. The seats were very comfortable and could be reclined as desired. Passengers boarded and strapped into their seats. Once the train reached cruising speed, they were able to get up and walk about.

The ride was very smooth and so gently curved that hardly anyone noticed changes in the train’s direction. A sound system played soft relaxing music on speakers. Many simply went to sleep in their seats and napped for the entire trip. There were also individual viewing screens and headsets where people could enjoy various entertainment media such as movies and games or see and talk with others at different locations. Each capsule had a refreshment cabinet providing drinks and snacks for passengers as well as restrooms.

If one wanted to travel more slowly and be able to see the scenery along the way, they took an aircraft that looked a lot like dirigibles such as the Graf Zeppelin from the early 1900’s. These were very safe and were not only very comfortable but also very luxurious like an ocean cruise liner of the early 2000’s. New propulsion systems allowed these airships to stop in midair or slowly circle magnificent sights while travelers took pictures or move very smoothly at speeds up to 350 miles per hour between destinations. These were also used to travel from one continent to another when there was no desire to go quickly. These were large enough to accommodate two hundred passengers with staterooms for sleeping and visiting as well as larger open areas for dining and entertainment.

The main transportation systems connecting the continents were ‘train’ capsules through tubes constructed on the bottom of the

seas like those between continental cities. These were even faster than land systems as they could reach speeds over 5,000 miles an hour for most of the journey. There were trains between all the continents including the Western Hemisphere and Europe, Africa, Asia, Australia, and many of the islands in the Caribbean and South Pacific. People of the world could become acquainted with people and places of other countries. There were branches along the way where train capsules could divert to separate tubes that took passengers along undersea routes that went slowly near amazing underwater scenes where they could observe creatures and habitats only previously seen in pictures.

Twice a year every family, couple, or individual were given a month's paid vacation to travel the world. These vacation months were alternated so only one fifth of the population of any location would be gone vacationing at any given time.

Finally, there was one other very special way of travel primarily for special vacations. Individuals could earn this reward by working hard in their process of developing Elohim's character in their personal life. A person, couple, or even an entire family could request a trip hosted by a spirit Son of Elohim in a 'bubble'. A Son of Elohim would appear in their living room and everyone involved would plan where they would like to go and what they would like to see. The Son of Elohim would use their finger and draw a circle in the air about their living room where all were comfortably seated and instantly all were at their destination. They could use the 'bubble' to tour around their destination before or during their stay.

Besides mere travel once they arrived, they could go out, explore, and even stay for a few days at resort hotel accommodations that had been built at popular locations. While practically every city and building of the modern world built before the return of Yeshua

The End of the Beginning

Christ had been destroyed, many of the natural wonders and beautiful scenic spots around the world had been preserved by Elohim. Only some buildings and structures that had been made prior to the year 2000 before the return of Christ still stood. The Great Pyramid, the Lincoln Memorial, and the Statue of Liberty were preserved for example. Trips to the Grand Canyon and the area once known as Old Yellowstone were popular locations in what was once called North America. Victoria Falls was very popular in the continent once known as Africa. The incredible mountain ranges of the Himalayas could be viewed up close while the passengers were kept comfortable temperature-wise in airships or bubbles. Travelers were afforded the most incredible views never before imagined or possible.

Of the thousands of places visited, by far the most requested was Jerusalem, the city of the King of Kings. Its grandeur exceeded every city ever known in history with grand palaces for the Sons of Elohim and incredible parks featuring exotic animals roaming freely about with no cages. The air temperature was maintained by the Sons of Elohim so all the animals were comfortable as well. There were conference centers where people could spend time with individuals they had read about in the Bible. Finally, the highlight of the trip came when they were ushered into the most unbelievably spectacular building any could imagine, the Great Temple of the living Elohim where they went and bowed down and worshipped the King of Kings, Yeshua Christ.

Chapter 27

Final Years of the Millennium

Years passed ever so quickly most Sons of Elohim thought. One hundred years, then two, three, soon five hundred years had passed and time marched on. No one died from any causes. Any accidental injury, cuts, bruises, and broken bones as well as any ailments were quickly healed by a Son of Elohim as the Holy Spirit flowed through them as it had in the past from the Father and the Son.

All mortals were taught proper nutritional habits and physical conditioning so few developed any sicknesses that had been common in the years before the Tribulation began. Practically all illnesses were discovered to be due to poor habits regarding food or exercise. Some came from those who simply over did something or did not get the proper amount of rest or sleep. Even hereditary health problems had been removed. Cancer simply did not exist in any form or heart diseases, which were the scourge of humanity before the return of Christ. No one even had to wear glasses to see clearly far off or up close for reading as healing from Elohim included the entire body and mind.

Another problem that had grown to a very high level in prior years was stress. This simply no longer existed at any level of social, work, education, or other activity in Elohim's Kingdom on earth. Every problem that would have created stress was dealt with in such a way that all issues were resolved and stress was immediately eliminated.

Those who continued as mortals who had survived to the return of Christ having already reached the age of accountability at that time experienced one of two things. Some were transformed into

spirit beings just like the Sons of Elohim who were changed at Christ's return.

The rest who were not transformed were those who never accepted Yeshua Christ as their personal Savior nor the new way of life, that was taught. They yearned for the old and continually argued and tried to explain or get around the results of their ideas that were counter to Elohim's revealed truth.

They generally did not like being with others especially those who openly strived to obey Elohim and follow His way. They would find others like themselves and occasionally tried to do mean things to others. This was always stopped by the intervention of an immortal Son of Elohim before anyone was seriously hurt physically, emotionally, or spiritually.

Those who were transformed were humble and submissive and strove to learn and live by every word of Elohim. The one thing they all had in common was that of love and kindness toward others. They never complained or sought special favors. They were even kind to those who did not like them and who tried to do mean things to them. In their prayers, they asked Elohim to help these others to find true happiness in obeying and serving Elohim as they had.

When the first fiftieth year was about to arrive during the Millennial reign of Yeshua Christ as King of Kings and Lord of Lords, the inhabitants of earth were taught about a new custom called the Jubilee Year based on a practice of ancient Israel after they had first entered the Promised Land lead by Joshua and Caleb. It was to be the year of release and restoration. All debts were canceled and anyone enslaved was freed. All land was returned to the original owners and their posterity. In this fiftieth Jubilee year, there was also a very special occasion for those who had received The Holy Spirit and had shown their uncompromising and complete faith and

The End of the Beginning

loyalty to Elohim the Father and Yeshua Christ to that point during the Millennium.

Zekiel and Deejah were present in Jerusalem at the Feast of Tabernacles during the first Jubilee Year for this first very special occasion. Zekiel's brother, Carl, was rewarded for his faithful acceptance of Yeshua Christ as his personal Savior and his tireless effort to follow the way of Elohim and after faithfully serving Elohim for fifty years was transformed into a Spirit born Son of Elohim. While they celebrated this event, others also were present for the transformation of those whom they had guided. Moel and Marjah watched with tears of joy in their eyes as Jason was transformed. Janel and Leejah were present as Paul and Johnny were transformed.

Zekiel and Moel found Janel just after the ceremony and celebration had wound down and found her with tears in her eyes. Leejah sat with her trying to comfort her.

"I know why you are so sad," Zekiel said with concern to Janel, "it's about Van."

"Yes," she answered, "I am so frustrated. He comes so close to breaking down and coming over to the truth only to find something to 'blow up' about and revert to his old self-righteous ways. He still does not realize that he cannot gain salvation through works. He thinks only 'sinners' need a Savior."

"I know how you feel," Moel consoled, "I feel pretty sad about an old geezer named George that Jason pulled from a caved-in building in the northern country."

“Join the crowd. It looks like every one of us has some we are working with that have not accepted Yeshua as their personal Savior and striving to live according to the way of Elohim. Ole Bob just will not seriously listen to anyone that tries to tell him the truth,” Leejah added, “He would rather hang out with those who continue to resist hearing much less accepting the truths we all present to them.”

“Each one of us must find some new approach as well as make more time to help these ‘lost souls’,” Zekiel admonished, “Don’t give up on them or yourselves. I know how you feel. That rascal Van is the toughest person I have ever met to give in to something he does not agree with. However, I am confident that he will eventually see the light. Kind of reminds me of Job.”

“Ah, yes, Job,” Janel remembered, “he had to lose virtually everything before he saw his own self-righteousness and repented. Say, why don’t we see if Job can spend some time with Van? Take him on a few learning experiences in a ‘bubble’.

“Janel,” Zekiel exclaimed, “I think you have hit on the perfect solution. Let us find various Sons of Elohim who had lived lives very much like those we are having problems with accepting Yeshua as their Savior. We will have them work together and after going through various experiences, Elohim willing, a door just might open.”

In an instant, Janel was talking with Job about Van and in an instant later; a plan was prepared that both felt would bring about a real change in Van. Others contacted those whose previous life was like George and Bob. Sharing this idea with others, soon problem individuals around the world were being helped to overcome their

The End of the Beginning

resistance to the truth of Elohim, and receiving Yeshua Christ as Savior and Lord.

During the next fifty years Job, Janel, and Zekiel countered every argument Van could throw at them and he finally realized how vain he had been. They watched him as he finally knelled down, covered himself with ashes wearing only an old robe, cried his heart out in sincere repentance for his ungodly self-righteous behavior, and fervently asked Christ to forgive him and become his Savior. Afterwards, he went to Zekiel and begged him to forgive him for what he had also done to him during their life before Christ returned. Zekiel just shook his head and marveled that he himself had been so reluctant when he was told during the Wedding Supper of the Lamb that he would be assigned to work with Van. Now he truly thanked Elohim's wisdom to allow him just a small part in bringing into the family of Elohim a new Son during the second Jubilee. In that very special ceremony, they were present to witness Van humbly knelling before Yeshua Christ who truly had become his personal Savior and see his transformation to Spirit born Son of Elohim.

Sad to say, it was not the same wonderful conclusion for Bob or George. During the ninetieth year of the millennium, they had meet and became friends as Bob had traveled to Jerusalem during that year's Feast of Tabernacles. Instead of attending the meetings and celebrations in the city, Bob went with George to the small town he lived in a short walk from Jerusalem. There he met with several others that George had befriended after the long pilgrimage from the North Country to the new nation of Israel. They spent their days and nights complaining about virtually everything that they had to do or not do to keep the Sons of Elohim from interfering with their lives.

When Leejah discovered that Bob had not returned from Jerusalem she found him with his new friends as they had begun

traveling toward the North Country where George had lived before the return of Christ. He refused to return with her to America and told her to leave him alone as he did not want her bothering him anymore. Moel had told Leejah that George was a troublemaker but in spite of trying to keep both men heading in the right direction toward accepting the way of Elohim, every time they gave them some space to see how they would live on their own, problems developed. Both were becoming more incorrigible rather than more Christ like as each year passed by.

In the clouds out of sight, Leejah and Moel looked down on the small band and heard their conversations that amounted to them thinking they would now be free from being hassled so much by the Spirit born Sons of Elohim. This group was not alone. As the years passed for some reason most of those, who resisted accepting the truths of Elohim, gradually began to migrate toward the same northern country during the Millennium.

As years passed at the Jubilee ceremony fewer and fewer people came forward to be transformed. In the seventh hundredth year, the fourteenth Jubilee saw the last transformation. Now, only two types of mortals were living on earth. There were the 'older ones.' These had reached the age of accountability and had survived to see the return of Christ but had not been transformed because they never accepted Christ as their personal Savior in true living faith and strived to obey Elohim and follow His way.

Then there were 'younger ones.' A few had been young children at the return of Christ having survived while most had been those innocent babies and those without a normal brain who were brought back to life at the return of Christ in order to live a normal life. While most had grown to responsible and godly adults and had received the Holy Spirit, none had been transformed to Spirit beings. The fact remained that these young people had never been tempted

The End of the Beginning

by Satan and proved they would remain faithful to Elohim totally resisting the deceit of Satan's lies.

Part Seven: Beyond the Millennium

Chapter 28

The Return of Satan

YESHUA returned to sit with Yahweh on their thrones in the third heaven. The reign of Yeshua on the earth was nearing its one thousandth year. Without a word, they disappeared into the Holy of Holies where only They could enter.

“It is just about time,” Yahweh remarked.

“Yes,” Yeshua said with some reticent emotion, *“It seems to have passed too quickly. I do not look forward to what must happen now.”*

“Yet, it must be done,” Yahweh added.

“I know, I know,” Yeshua said with trepidation, *“But, that still doesn’t make me feel any better. We are going to lose some.”*

“How sad but true, yet I think more about the ones we have gained,” Yahweh noted, ***“Still, better we find out now before we change some to find them rebelling like Lucifer.”***

“I still cannot fathom the human mind that in spite of a thousand years of the incredible things they have experienced that some would still turn away from our truth and desire to follow the lies of the evil one. Even though Satan has been bound, there are those who remember his deceitful ways and desire to follow it. They have told these lies to others who willing would rather trust in lies than the truth.”

“Yet, things in eternity past were just as incredibly wonderful as what humans have experienced on earth under your rule and Lucifer not only turned bad himself, but also led one third of our angelic host into rebellion.”

“That is why we began man’s creation in the first place. A being that is physical that will end its days of mortality returning to the dust it was made from unless we give it our Spirit so it can attain immortality in both body and soul. Adam and Eve also had everything that was wonderful to enjoy but they chose to listen to Satan and nearly lost their hope for eternity. Thankfully they both repented,” concluded Yeshua.

“The evil one will draw away many of those of the north and east and lead them in an attack on Jerusalem just like the Beast did before your return to earth to set up your kingdom for a thousand years,” Yahweh noted.

“My spiritual brothers and sisters have spent hundreds of years dealing with those who are rebellious. While they have brought many around to accept the truth of Our way. Sadly, there are still too many that only pay lip service while their hearts are full of doubt and insincerity. It seems that after seven hundred years, things began to change. The number since that time seems to be increasing and I have seen a migration from other parts of the world to the area in the North Country to join with others who have not accepted Our way,” Yeshua acknowledged with grief in His voice. *“I don’t know what else to do. If I did, I would have done it.”*

“No, you must not feel bad. In having given each independent being free choice, while the overwhelming majority chose our way, sadly, a very few somehow rejected the truth and have turned again toward evil as they matured. We discussed this for eons of time

The End of the Beginning

before we began. As sad as it feels to lose even one, the joy of the multitude of those who become as we are in truth and godliness is worth the price. Always remember, they all had a choice and if they choose the way of Satan it is on their own head in spite of everything we could possibly do."

Yeshua's mind was still troubled. Losing over 200 million beings who followed the Beast and False Prophet before He returned was one thing but losing that number of people after He and all the Saints had worked for a thousand years with each individual without the religious confusion that was common before and during the tribulation grieved Him greatly. Slowly and with great effort, He was able to switch His thoughts to the billions of souls who had chosen the right way and this was a small comfort to Him.

.....

As time, neared one thousand years of Christ's reign on earth something unthinkable was about to happen. After meeting with the Father in heaven, Christ called a meeting of all angels and Sons of Elohim. Inside His temple on earth, they all surrounded Christ the King.

"It is time for the next chapter of mankind to begin," Yeshua spoke solemnly; "My reign on earth nears one thousand years. The world has been restored and repopulated. It is now ready to receive those of the second resurrection. But, before this can happen, the children of men must be tried as all of us have been tried in the past."

"How can that be?" exclaimed David, King of Israel.

“We were all tried by Satan,” Adam exclaimed, “and he lies chained in the bottomless pit.”

A murmur swept throughout the congregation that became full of wonder and astonishment at what was being said.

“Just as you were tried and overcome the deceiver so must these be tested,” Christ proclaimed, *“My Father and I cannot and will not accept anyone into the Kingdom who has not overcome Satan’s lies and deceit. Now it is time for Satan to tempt mankind again. He will be freed to roam the earth and find those who will serve him rather than Elohim.”*

“So, that is why you didn’t destroy him?” Paul remarked as he found the answer to a question that had puzzled him from the time of Christ’s return when he came down to Jerusalem with the heavenly host and watched Satan being chained and thrown into the bottomless pit. There was not a single word uttered by any that stood about the throne of Christ. They experienced a very sobering feeling as they realized the gravity of what was soon to happen and how it would affect those still mortal on the earth.

The meeting ended and all left the throne room except for the two great archangels, Michael and Gabriel. Then Christ along with the great archangels descended into the bottomless pit and went to where Satan lay bound and chained in the darkness.

“Satan!” Yeshua commanded as the light of His presence pierced the darkness, *“Stand before me.”*

As the chains snapped and fell off, Satan uncurled like a coiled snake and began to rise before Christ. His sharp teeth were barred and his eyes were blazing with a hatred that never stopped growing.

The End of the Beginning

As he rose up, he spread his wings, his clawed hands opened, as he prepared to spring toward Christ. Michael instantly grabbed one arm while Gabriel took the other and both held Satan back as he hissed horrible curses. From the time of his rebellion, his features had gradually changed from the beautiful angelic being he had been created to look like into a terrible and fierce dragon-like creature.

“Unfair, unfair,” his words finally became more civil but still there was a hiss.

“That is not true,” Yeshua replied.

“You promised me more time,” Satan argued, “you cut my time short. You know that is true.”

“I never promised your time would not be interrupted,” Yeshua answered, *“if I had not intervened when I did you would have caused the death of every last person on earth and ultimately even destroyed the earth itself. I had promised my followers that I would never forsake them, so I kept my word to them.”*

“But, what about my time? Are you going to keep your word to me?” Satan’s lips curled into a sinister smile.

“Yes, even to you, Satan. I will keep my word. You are going to be released. You will find the world has been restored nearly as it was when I created a Garden in Eden. Only this time there are millions of people not just two as you found before. They have all been thoroughly educated to the truth.”

“So was Adam and Eve,” Satan laughed.

“Unlike Adam and Eve, they have all witnessed the destructive end of following your way, a way that leads to death,” Yeshua Christ retorted.

“Some would rather die than follow you,” he spit out his words with rage.

“Then go and find those that will follow you,” commanded Yeshua, *“but you may not do some things.”*

“I knew there would be a catch. Well, what things can I not do?” he asked.

“You cannot touch their bodies or minds, you cannot take any life, and you cannot destroy the new cities and infrastructures that have been built since you were imprisoned,” Yeshua Christ answered.

“Then what can I do?” Satan hissed.

“That is for you to determine,” Yeshua remarked.

Then the great archangels released Satan’s arms. He let out a shriek and shot out of the bottomless pit like a bolt of lightning. He found himself alone as no other demonic angels were released from the pit. As he soared, invisibly, above the earth and circled it, he saw the new cities and people. Invisibly he moved about the people watching them as they toiled or journeyed about. He kept looking for any way he could approach them to find some discontent. In a northern country and an eastern country, he found the only established groups of those who had banded together and were different from those in other parts of the world. These people of the north were those who had left the other countries of the world

The End of the Beginning

rejecting the way of Elohim. They were those who found fault or deluded reasons to complain and not live or think as one should after being taught the true way of life by the servants of Elohim.

Satan had found the rest of the earth was filled with mortal inhabitants of the earth and nearly all of them had Elohim's Spirit but were not changed to immortal. Even though they were loyal to Elohim, he began trying to work his way of deceit and temptation into their minds. Satan became very unhappy as he saw them praying to Elohim for help and talking with the Sons of Elohim about their feelings and unusual thoughts that had suddenly started entering their minds.

Within a year there were groups forming nearly everywhere that began to question things and bring up things that had been resolved years before. Satan found the greatest number of those who had resisted following the way of truth in the Eastern and Northern parts of Asia, and in Asia Minor, which were previously known as China, Russia, and the Middle East.

The Sons of Elohim worked hard to help people resist wrong thoughts and actions. They encouraged everyone to trust Elohim and follow His way. They began to despair as more and more seemed to turn their backs on Elohim. It was shocking to them when they witnessed some who had been given the Holy Spirit become lukewarm and start drifting away from the truth. The Saints found some comfort as they learned at meetings in Jerusalem with Christ that it was better to find out now than to wait till, they were spirit beings and become like Satan ultimately doomed to spend eternity totally alone in an endless void separated from light and Elohim.

A great celebration of the 1,000-year anniversary of the return of Christ was planned and the whole world would take part in

observing it. Sons of Elohim had arranged for everyone to spend one hour in Jerusalem during that day. They would miraculously transport everyone to and from Jerusalem during the day of celebration. Some people had decided to travel there early by means that are more conventional separately from help by the Sons of Elohim. They would spend several days in and around Jerusalem as well as take part in the celebration that would take place.

As festivities began that day at sunrise, millions began arriving and taking part within the walls of Jerusalem. Just before midday, Gabriel raced into the throne room.

“My Lord!” he gasped, “It is as you expected. Thousands of people now surround the city who opposes you. In addition, I have seen a mass of two hundred million forming an army entering the valley of Armageddon with weapons. They are skirting around the Lake of Fire supposing their presence will not be seen by being covered by the smoke of Gehenna fire.”

“Yes, the fire of Gehenna has slowly died down as it has lost most of its supply of material to burn. How fitting that these incorrigible wretches should chose the same path that lead to destruction for others who thought to destroy Jerusalem and Elohim’s people before. The time is at hand to end this evil generation. They have no excuse to follow Satan. They were taught the truth. They have seen its fruit. They have made their choice and now they must reap what they sow,” Yeshua Christ resolved. *“Alert all the brethren and angels the last war has begun.”*

From every corner of the world, the Sons of Elohim and angels appeared about the city and above the valley of Armageddon. Yeshua suddenly appeared in the sky and everyone saw Him and heard His voice as thunder rumbled and lightning flashed.

The End of the Beginning

“Oh, my children,” He cried out as He held back the pain of being heartbroken by the sight, “Why have you listened to the deceiver? He has lied to you before and has lied and misled you again. After 1,000 years of joy, peace, and prosperity, you have turned your back on Yahweh, the source of all good things. You have chosen the way of Satan, which is death and destruction... Your blood is on your own hands... So be it!”

Power surged from Him that passed through the Sons of Elohim and His angels and that power turned into fire and brimstone that fell on the followers of Satan. Just as it was when Yeshua Christ returned, this army as well was consumed by the power of Elohim. The flesh literally melted off their bodies as their bones crumbled into dust of each one of the deceived and their remains soon lay as smoldering ashes. Together, Gabriel and Michael again chained Satan and took him back to the bottomless pit, that dark dimensionless void where neither light nor sound could penetrate or escape.

The chains seemed to tighten mercilessly and it was as if the weight of the entire universe crushed in upon Satan from all directions preventing him from moving. He could not even coil up as he lay as one dead in a coffin. All he had was his mind. For the first time since he rebelled, a thought flashed into his mind, ‘Had he been wrong in rebelling?’ He immediately flung it out of his consciousness but it kept wandering back in only increasing his hatred, seething rage and bitterness as eternity unfolded. Rather than despair, he kept hoping that he would again be released. Sometimes he thought that he would change and become obedient to Elohim then he would snicker as he thought how he would deceive Elohim with that notion in order to again infiltrate the angelic band and maybe if only he could get a few of the new Sons of Elohim into his

camp. Finally, finally, he thought, this would give us enough strength to overcome Elohim. The darkness seemed to strangle even his thoughts, which chaotically and incoherently ran on in mindless delusions.

Around the world, a miraculous transformation was taking place. Everyone who had remained loyal to Elohim and who refused to follow Satan was now changed from mortal to immortality by the Holy Spirit of Elohim. All now rejoiced, as they had truly become one with the Father as Christ had when resurrected and as all who had experienced the first resurrection or were transformed when Christ returned to begin His Millennial reign on earth. The celebration was like the Wedding Supper of the Lamb when Christ returned. Not noticed by any at this great time of celebration, Yeshua Christ appeared before Elohim, the Father in the third heaven.

"The first part is finished," Yeshua reported to EL, "those mortal during my millennial reign have been either transformed to spirit being or destroyed back to the dust of the ground. Our newly born Sons of Elohim are rejoicing and giving You praise and thanks for your love and mercy. The souls of those who have rejected our way are in hell reaping the punishment they have earned by their evil ways during their life. It is now time for the second resurrection."

Chapter 29

The Second Resurrection

The spiritual abode of the souls of those who had not had a real chance to learn the truth of Elohim and accept Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior seemed to last for an eternity. These people were beginning to get a taste of what it was to reap what they had sown during their earthly life. Good was rewarded while bad was punished. Many of the rich found themselves as virtual slaves or living in shanties while those who were poor but decent and kind found themselves in fine homes. For them it seemed like life continued in a normal fashion and this continued until the second resurrection. One thousand years had finally passed and it was time for their physical bodies to be resurrected from their graves. In the second resurrection, their human spirit would again be placed into the resurrected physical human body it had before death with a few differences. Most would receive a strong healthy body and normal mind in its prime with all afflictions and deformities removed.

All these people in the second resurrection had never really had a chance to hear and understand the essential truths of Elohim and His plan of salvation while they had lived and experienced a world under the influence of Satan. After the second resurrection, they would all get their first real chance to accept Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior. Before the End Time, there had been arguments by religious leaders and scholars against this truth. They tried to call it a 'second' chance. They could not see in their arrogance against the truths of Elohim that most of humankind never had that first real chance in life before the return of Christ. Religions of the world were for the most part a mixture of truth and error. During the entire span of humanity's life on earth before the return of Yeshua Christ,

Elohim, in His wisdom carefully called those whom He felt would accept the truth and gave them their chance for salvation.

Before the advent of Christ, this calling was selectively directed at the seed of Abraham and then primarily the seed of Jacob or Israel and some who joined themselves to them and their faith. After Christ's earthly mission, Elohim had greatly expanded this calling to all of humanity regardless of heredity to be led to Elohim through the efforts of those who had fully accepted the truth and shown true saving faith. With His Spirit united with theirs, members of every race across the face of the earth were led to truth and saving faith and they too received the Holy Spirit. However, in comparison to the whole world's population only a few that Elohim called were able to come out of this Babylon of religious confusion, learn, and live according to the full measure of essential truth and most importantly truly accept Yeshua Christ as their Lord and Savior in living faith.

The startling fact revealed that between the time of Adam to the return of Christ the overwhelming majority of those who claimed to be Christian followed the religion of men and human leaders and never really knew Yeshua or had a true living faith in Him as Lord and Savior. The reason for this was the ignorant or purposed miss teaching of religions swayed by Satan. For these and others who never heard the truths of Elohim and never had a chance during their earthly life, their only hope which they did not know was that after the second resurrection there would be no Satan to continually deceive or lead them astray. They would then hear all the truth of Elohim directly from living glorified Sons of Elohim. At that time, those who truly accepted Yeshua as Lord and Savior and Elohim's truth and then demonstrated living faith would be given the Holy Spirit and at the appropriate time in the first or second Jubilee Year after their physical resurrection be transformed into spirit bodies to take their place in Elohim's Kingdom. Those who failed to accept

The End of the Beginning

Yeshua as Lord and Savior by the second Jubilee would be thrown into the Lake of Fire and ultimately face the Final Judgment.

.....

"It is time for the second resurrection," Yahweh announced.

By the power of Elohim, billions of bodies across the ends of the earth began reforming and appeared at the place their previous lives had ended. The bodies that had perished in the seas or had been destroyed into pieces appeared on land nearby where they last existed. Bones appeared, and then organs and membranes finally flesh and hair formed just like the verses of Ezekiel chapter 37. Finally, clothing covered their bodies as their souls were reunited with their physical bodies. These were the billions of persons from the time of Adam to the end of time prior to Christ's return that had reached the age of accountability but had lived their entire life on earth and had no real opportunity to gain salvation.

This was to be their first and only chance for salvation and was prophesied as the Great White Throne Judgment in Revelation 20: 11 - 15.

¹¹Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. ¹²And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. ¹³The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according

to his works. ¹⁴Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. ¹⁵And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.

Some had heard the preaching of religious charlatans and seen the hypocrisy of religions in general along with the division and strife among supposedly Christian organizations to the point where none of it made sense nor could such people be trusted so they never got involved. Some had lived in such dire circumstance the only time they heard the name of Elohim or Yeshua Christ was in curse words and phrases. Their whole lives were filled with violence as they fought to survive 'just one more day'.

Many lives were cut short by an untimely accidental or murderous death. While they lived in an area where the gospel was preached, they literally had little chance to hear it and virtually no chance to find salvation through Yeshua Christ. Those of the more remote countries such as in Asia and many south Pacific islands had never heard about Yeshua [Jesus] Christ their entire life. Others lived in countries where pagan religions were so ingrained that the message of Christ landed on mostly ears and minds that could not understand it and was received by only a very few who had been in the first resurrection.

As their consciousness' adjusted from their abode as souls in limbo to renewed life on earth most screamed as in pain as they gasped the air and looked about them at a world as different as night from day. Within seconds of their resurrection all found themselves in park like settings with green grass, large trees, flowering bushes, and flowers along pathways leading off into the distance.

The End of the Beginning

"It is time to learn the way of Elohim," they heard in their own language, the voices of glowing beings that seemed to hover all about them.

"But, it is too late we are dead and all hope is lost," they replied.

Just as the verses of Ezekiel chapter 37 prophetically pictured, all around the entire earth an uncountable number of people who had again come back to life, at first, were startled thinking all hope was lost. As they looked about some pinched themselves to see if they were truly alive or just dreaming. Yes, alive, but now what, they all wondered. All around them, they saw strange people who seemed to glow but they soon saw in the eyes of those beings a kind and gentle look with smiles. They were gathered into groups and before them appeared a feast of wonderful looking and smelling fruits, vegetables, and meats simmering on platters on tables with benches.

"What are you waiting for? Go ahead and eat," they heard a voice saying. Without need of further prodding young and old slipped onto the benches and began to pile food on plates before them. At each end of the tables sat spirit born Sons of Elohim who also joined in the feasting. At first the talk was in hushed tones as they began to share their amazement at the current events taking place and talk drifted to their past life experience. Most had some kind of feeling that they had not understood what life was really all about. At death, they somehow felt that it was not final. They realized that they had been somewhere between their past life and the present. It had seemed like a never-ending dream. Some who were poor had 'dreamed' of living as nobility, while some who had been rich had 'dreamed' of living as paupers. They had heard a voice telling them that they were 'reaping what they had sown during their previous earthly life.'

The Sons of Elohim began telling them that their ‘dreams’ were in fact a preview of life as they would now live in the flesh here on earth. All would be taken to cities and homes in various locations already built for them. They were told that they would be taught and then judged from the books of the Bible. All had a chance of being reborn as Spirit born Sons of Elohim if they chose the Way of Elohim and completely in true faith accepted Yeshua Christ as their personal Lord and Savior.

When all were fully satisfied of feasting, groups were led to their new dwellings that had been built during the millennium. Most family lines were restored and these individuals were placed in cities close to each other. They began a similar routine as those who had survived one thousand years before immediately following the return of Christ. While this time there were billions instead of millions there were also millions more of the Sons of Elohim who were reborn into spirit bodies during the millennium. Each morning those of the second reservation worked and each afternoon they were taught. They were taught just like the others were taught in living detail in groups of 12 as the ‘bubble’ revealed truths that finally made sense based on the Word of Elohim and not from the imagination of charlatan religious leaders. These had lived, seen, and felt the result of living by the evil ways of Satan. Practically all of them were ready and willing to find a better way. The lies and half-truths were corrected. There was at last, hope for all who would listen and accept Elohim’s truth.

The earth flourished and from one end to the other, around and from pole to pole it was like the Garden of Eden. Every single one of the billions that came up in the second resurrection was cared for and given attention concerning any and all questions that bothered them or had become stumbling blocks toward their salvation. Those who had lived immorally but were not proud of the wrongs they had

The End of the Beginning

done in their previous life were among the first saved. There were prostitutes, thieves, and even murderers who repented and truly changed and accepted Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as Lord and Savior. Most of this group was transformed in the First Jubilee Year following their resurrection. Perhaps the slowest group was those who had thought themselves righteous in their past life and many of this group had been religious leaders who believed and taught errors from traditions of men more than truth from Elohim's Word. There were many who were actually Pharisees during and after the time Yeshua was on the earth in the flesh. This group and the rest who finally accepted Elohim's way without reservation and fully accepted Yeshua Christ through living faith as their Lord and Savior were transformed in the Second Jubilee Year. Thus, was fulfilled the prophecy:

Yeshua said to them, "Assuredly, I say to you that tax collectors and harlots enter the kingdom of Elohim before you." (Matthew 21:31 NKJV)

Some of those who were self-righteous or very wealthy in their past life actually became incorrigible but the overwhelming majority of those in the second resurrection came to reject the way of Satan and accept Yeshua Christ as their personal Savior and began walking in faith along the path of righteousness. After all, they had endured in life and in death, they knew there was nothing to compare to Elohim's mercy and love. Even most of the rich learned their lesson and served those they had oppressed during their earthly life with humility, honor, and respect.

For one hundred years, Elohim judged them from the books of the Bible²⁶. As their hearts were transformed to that of godly sorrow for the wrongs, they had done in honest deep repentance they

sincerely changed their ways. They thanked Yeshua for dying to save their souls from the death they deserved. They thanked Elohim for His plan of salvation bringing into His family in their appointed season new Sons of Elohim. The first fruits of the harvest (pictured by the Feast of Pentecost) who had been transformed and those of the first resurrection had finally reaped the great harvest for Elohim (pictured by the Feast of Tabernacle and the Last Great Day) of those of the second resurrection who were now new spirit beings that would serve Elohim faithfully for all eternity.

Finally, after one hundred years completed by the second Jubilee all had been saved who would be saved. The rest remained incorrigible and with finality, these were taken to the lake of fire that leads to hell awaiting a final judgment that to them was an eternity away. That final judgment would be eternal damnation, the second death, from which none would ever exist again in any form or consciousness.

Chapter 30

The New Jerusalem Comes to Earth from Heaven

Finally, the only inhabitants of the earth were spirit beings, Sons of Elohim, and angels. Suddenly, they all heard a trumpet sound and then saw an amazing sight. Above the earth appeared what looked like an incredibly large pyramid shape covered in solid gold. Its dimensions were over 1,500 miles on each side of its square base and rose over 1,500 miles high with sides that formed an immense pyramid. This was a new city the likes never before seen on earth and it slowly descended. Suddenly, the entire planet was incased by a white-hot flame of light that was pure energy that purified the earth's surface destroying everything that was ever touched or used by the ungodly.

The area of land that was the old city of Jerusalem as well as most of the original Promised Land of Israel was directly under the new city. The New Jerusalem came to a stop hovering one hundred miles above the old city in a stationary orbit. It had three gates on each of its four sides; each gate was made of a single pearl. Its foundations were stacked twelve deep, with each made of the most beautiful gemstones ever seen and sent a rainbow of light in every direction. Within, it had streets made of pure gold. There were one hundred and forty-four levels or floors built inside of the slanting outer walls on its four sides. Each level was over 10 miles high. There was an open atrium in its center that rose from the foundation to the top where the very throne on which the Great Elohim Almighty Yahweh sat with Yeshua's throne on His right side. Slowly winding from the top level to the bottom was a river that circled about each level and cascaded in numerous waterfalls and a final waterfall that fell from each level to the next level below. At each level, the river pooled into lakes surrounded by a carpet of grass with trees that bore

beautiful colorful ripe fruit. The source of the river came from under the very throne of the Great Elohim Almighty Yahweh now known to mankind as Elohim the Father who would now make His abode with man. There were several groups of open elevators near the center. Some went to the next level above. Some went up 12 levels. Finally, there were 7 elevators that went from the bottom level to the very top level. The Sons of Elohim and the angels had no need to use elevators to ascend from one level to another. The elevators were open and provided a breathtaking view of the various levels as they moved up. It allowed each group a means to remain together while their attention was on what was about them as moved from one level to another.

The earth had become the focal center of the entire universe. The surface of the earth had been remade into a perfect sphere having no mountains, valleys, nor seas. Yet picturesque lifelike moving images of mountains and valleys with abundant forests as well as seascapes were projected when desired for viewing from each dwelling on earth. There were untold millions of mansions within the New Jerusalem. All the Sons of Elohim who had been in the first resurrection were shown to their new mansions or better said palaces in the New Jerusalem. All the other born-again Sons of Elohim from the millennial reign of Christ and the second resurrection had their own mansions across the four corners of the earth. They all celebrated, praising and thanking Elohim the Father and Yeshua Christ for their joy and life eternal.

Those who were transformed during the millennial reign of Christ and those of the second resurrection regularly entered the New Jerusalem to visit with friends they had made during the millennial reign of Christ and during the one hundred years of the Great White Throne Judgment. There was so much to see and experience by all it would take an eternity for this to take place. The most popular

The End of the Beginning

activity was spending time with Yeshua and Yahweh, listening to Them talk about things that spanned eternity. The second most popular activity was traveling back in time in a ‘bubble’ to see every event that had ever taken place. They could go back in time to see everything that had happened in the creation of the earth forward to the Second Coming of Yeshua Christ. Another popular activity was for each person to travel back in time following their family tree observing significant events in the lives of every ancestor from the time of Adam and Eve to Noah and to the time of their physical birth and their birth as a Son of Elohim. It was remarkable as they observed the hand of Elohim shaping events intricately over thousands of years. All continually praised Yeshua Christ for completing His great plan for humanity so perfectly.

.....

After an eon of time while all of humanity busily went about their activities, there came a time in which Yahweh was sitting on His throne at the top of New Jerusalem thinking. He turned to look at Yeshua sitting beside Him on His throne. The creation of man was even more incredible than He had hoped for when They first thought about and discussed it. There had been tens of billions filled with Elohim’s Spirit and now changed to immortality with Them. Their number had passed the number of angelic beings that had been created in eternity past. Those angels who had remained loyal to them after Satan’s rebellion worked seamlessly together with the born-again Sons of Elohim. The loss of those human beings who chose to follow Satan was less than one hundred million over the entire span of humanity’s history. A mathematician would find this to be less than one thousandth of one percent who had ultimately forsook Elohim’s way. Yes, Satan was the biggest loser that ever

existed. Nevertheless, even that very small amount had greatly saddened Yahweh and Yeshua who had known each individual down to the number of hairs on their heads. They had given all well beyond what could ever be considered a fair and real chance to become immortal like Themselves. No one made them choose otherwise. Yahweh and Yeshua looked about the earth, watched the multiple billions of new Sons of Elohim all busy and not just happy, they were ecstatic, and overjoyed with the glory they shared with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

Wow, it just could not get any better than this. On the other hand, could it? Yahweh thought.

Yeshua's mind was thinking the very same thing at exactly the same moment.

“Yeshua,” Yahweh said with a smile on His face, ***“Got any ideas about our next creation project?”***

“Yah,” Yeshua replied, *“I was just thinking about that little green and blue gem of a planet circling that sun... and that sun ...and that sun...”* He repeated over and over as His eye gazed throughout the near infinite number of galaxies of the vast universe while noting a nearly infinite number of planets very much resembling the Earth when He had created Adam and Eve.

“Do you think You have enough Brothers and Sisters to get the job done?” Yahweh asked as He began to laugh.

“It'll be close but I think we just might have exactly enough,” Yeshua also began to laugh and concluded, *“at least for this next go around.”*

Epilogue

The Holy Scriptures state that there will never be an end to the increase of Elohim's [God's] realm. Can we know how this will take place? Consider the following prophecy.

Of the increase^{H4768} of his government^{H4951} and peace^{H7965} there shall be no^{H369} end^{H7093} Isaiah 9:7 (NKJV)

Exactly what do the words 'increase', 'government', and 'end' really mean? Let us take a look at the Hebrew definitions of these words.

increase: H4768 *mar-beeth'* From [H7235](#); a multitude; also offspring; specifically *interest* (on capital):—greatest part, greatness, increase, multitude.

government: H4951 *mis-raw'* From [H8280](#); empire:—government.

end: H7093 *kates* Contracted from [H7112](#); an extremity; adverbially (with prepositional prefix) *after*:— + after, (utmost) border, end, [in-] finite, X process.

If we expanded the meaning of each word in Isaiah 9: 7, would it tell us what the next step in the future of Elohim's creation projects will be?

Elohim's [God's] multitude of offspring and the peace of His empire, government or kingdom will have no end as it will be increasing infinitely.

Well, why do you think Elohim [God] made a universe so nearly infinitely large and to date has used such a small microscopic part of it? One tiny planet called Earth in just one solar system. In

these countless galaxies, there are star and planetary systems without number that are nearly the same as this one. Is it possible that a new man and woman will be created on each of these planets? Is it possible that Satan and his demons will be released and again try to deceive a new creation by Elohim? Will there be another adventure as Elohim works to transform mortal flesh and blood beings made of the dust of the ground after some period of testing that they would be eternally faithful to Elohim and be transformed into Immortal beings as have been done here on Earth? What part will all the new Sons of Elohim, the new Immortals, play in this new venture? Perhaps, all the members of the Elohim family will work together and begin toOh well, that will not be revealed here for that is entirely another story that I have not finished dreaming about.

**The End of the Beginning of Man! Now, Spirit-born
family members of Elohim's Family who are
now the New Immortals.**

Thus concludes:

The End of the Beginning
(The Story of the New Immortals: Part 3)

By

Richard O'Decatur
Author, Apostle, Prophet, and Minister of Yeshua [Jesus]
Christ

REFERENCES

a. Strong does not tell the reader that the Greek *Iesous* is actually transliterated from this shortened Hebrew form, *Yeshua*, and not directly from the longer form *Yehoshua*. The process from "Yehoshua" to "Jesus" looks like this:

Hebrew *Yehoshua* à Hebrew *Yeshua*

Hebrew *Yeshua* à Greek *Iesous*

Greek *Iesous* à English *Jesus*

This source:

http://www.yashanet.com/library/yeshua_or_Yahshua.htm

The Messiah's Hebrew Name: "Yeshua" Or "Yahshua"?
by Dr. Daniel Botkin

1. Many Protestant Christians believe in what is called a 'secret' rapture to occur before the Great Tribulation. This is based on a few scriptures taken out of context and is inconsistent with other scriptures. Taking all the scriptures together concerning the second coming of Jesus [Yeshua] Christ clearly show the resurrection of the dead saints and transformation of the living saints only happens one time and that is after the Great Tribulation. Sad to say many Christians will cling to the manmade myth of a rapture before the Great Tribulation rather than read their Bibles and accept the truth of Elohim. For those who desire to follow Elohim rather than man please read the following scriptures for the proof and absolute truth of the transformation of living saints only when Christ returns to this earth and His feet touch the Mount of Olives on that very day and this only happens after the Great Tribulation and the Last Trumpet sounds just as Jesus [Yeshua] Christ returns and calls His

Saints to the Wedding Supper of the Lamb before descending to rule for 1,000 years on this earth.

- *Matthew 24:29-31(NKJV)*

29“Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. 30Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. 31And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

- *1 Corinthians 15:51-53 (NKJV)*

51Behold, I tell you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed— 52in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

- *1 Thessalonians 4:13-17 (NKJV)*

13But I do not want you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning those who have fallen asleep, lest you sorrow as others who have no hope. 14For if we believe that Yeshua died and rose again, even so Elohim will bring with Him those who sleep in Yeshua. 15For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who are asleep. 16For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and

The End of the Beginning

with the trumpet of Elohim. And the dead in Christ will rise first ¹⁷Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord.

- *Revelation 11:15 (NKJV)*

¹⁵Then the seventh angel sounded: And there were loud voices in heaven, saying, “The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!”

The seventh angel to blow his trumpet is the last angel to sound before Yeshua Christ returns to the earth. Chapters 12 through 18 are inset chapters. The next event concerning the return of Christ after chapter 11 is chapter 19 where He descends with the armies of heaven to the earth. The resurrection of the dead saints and the transformation of living saints are gathered to Him in the air as He comes down. At that time on that very day His feet will touch the Mount of Olives.

- *Zechariah 14:1-4 (NKJV)*

*¹Behold, the day of the Lord is coming,
And your spoil will be divided in your midst.*

*²For I will gather all the nations to battle against
Jerusalem;*

The city shall be taken,

The houses rifled,

And the women ravished.

Half of the city shall go into captivity,

But the remnant of the people shall not be cut off from the city.

*3Then the Lord will go forth
And fight against those nations,
As He fights in the day of battle.*

*4And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives,
Which faces Jerusalem on the east.
And the Mount of Olives shall be split in two,
From east to west,
Making a very large valley;
Half of the mountain shall move toward the north
And half of it toward the south.*

- 2.** When Christ returns every eye will see Him as He descends to the earth from heaven.

Revelation 1:7, 8 (NKJV)

*7Behold, He is coming with clouds, and every eye will see Him, even they who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. Even so, Amen. 8“**I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End,**” says the Lord, **“who is and who was and who is to come, the Almighty.”***

- 3.** The marriage supper of the Lamb will take place as Christ returns to the earth. All dead and living saints will be caught up to meet Christ in the Air.

Revelation 19:6-9 (NKJV)

6And I heard, as it were, the voice of a great multitude, as the sound of many waters and as the sound of mighty thunderings, saying, “Alleluia! For the Lord Elohim Omnipotent reigns! 7Let us be glad and rejoice and give Him glory, for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and His wife has made herself ready.” 8And to her it was granted to be arrayed in fine linen,

The End of the Beginning

clean and bright, for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints. ⁹Then he said to me, "Write: 'Blessed are those who are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb!'"

4. During the end of the age before Christ returns true Christians will be persecuted by governments and especially religious organizations. Christians will flee from one city to another to escape being captured and killed. There will be a satanic leader and world government that will deceive most of the world and will try to kill all who will not submit by beheading them.

- *Matthew 10:17-23 (NKJV)*

¹⁷But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to councils and scourge you in their synagogues. ¹⁸You will be brought before governors and kings for My sake, as a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. ¹⁹But when they deliver you up, do not worry about how or what you should speak. For it will be given to you in that hour what you should speak; ²⁰for it is not you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you. ²¹"Now brother will deliver up brother to death, and a father his child; and children will rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death. ²²And you will be hated by all for My name's sake. But he who endures to the end will be saved. ²³When they persecute you in this city, flee to another. For assuredly, I say to you, you will not have gone through the cities of Israel before the Son of Man comes.

- *Revelation 13:1-17 (NKJV)*

¹Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his

horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. ²Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority. ³And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. ⁴So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"

⁵And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months. ⁶Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against Elohim, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven. ⁷It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation. ⁸All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

⁹If anyone has an ear, let him hear. ¹⁰He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

¹¹Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon. ¹²And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. ¹³He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. ¹⁴And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an

The End of the Beginning

image to the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived. ¹⁵He was granted power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. ¹⁶He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, ¹⁷and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

- *Revelation 20:4 (NKJV)*

⁴And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Yeshua and for the word of Elohim, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.

5. It is highly probable that Elohim will provide for His servants during the end of the age both food and clothing that does not wear out like He did for the tribes of Israel journeying to the Promise Land.

- *Nehemiah 9:20-21 (NKJV)*

²⁰ You also gave Your good Spirit to instruct them, And did not withhold Your manna from their mouth, And gave them water for their thirst. ²¹ Forty years You sustained them in the wilderness; They lacked nothing; Their clothes did not wear out And their feet did not swell.

- *1 Kings 17:2-6 (NKJV)*

²Then the word of the Lord came to him, saying, ³“Get away

from here and turn eastward, and hide by the Brook Cherith, which flows into the Jordan. ⁴And it will be that you shall drink from the brook, and I have commanded the ravens to feed you there.” ⁵So he went and did according to the word of the Lord, for he went and stayed by the Brook Cherith, which flows into the Jordan. ⁶The ravens brought him bread and meat in the morning, and bread and meat in the evening; and he drank from the brook.

6. The twelve apostles are to sit on twelve thrones beside the Lord.

- *Matthew 19:27-30 (NKJV)*

²⁷Then Peter answered and said to Him, “See, we have left all and followed You. Therefore what shall we have?” ²⁸So Yeshua said to them, “Assuredly I say to you, that in the regeneration, when the Son of Man sits on the throne of His glory, you who have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. ²⁹And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My name’s sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and inherit eternal life. ³⁰But many who are first will be last, and the last first.

7. Elohim’s angels protect those who love and serve Him.

- *Psalms 91:11-16 (NKJV)*

¹¹For He shall give His angels charge over you, to keep you in all your ways. ¹²In their hands they shall bear you up, lest you dash your foot against a stone. ¹³You shall tread upon the lion and the cobra, the young lion and the serpent you shall trample underfoot. ¹⁴“Because he has set his love upon Me, therefore I will deliver him; I will set him on high, because he has known My name. ¹⁵He shall

The End of the Beginning

call upon Me, and I will answer him; I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him and honor him. 16With long life I will satisfy him, and show him My salvation.”

8. The account of Lazarus and the Rich man by Yeshua demonstrates that the good find themselves in paradise upon death while the bad go to a place of flames and torment.

- *Luke 16:19-31 (NKJV)*

19“There was a certain Rich man who was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously every day. 20But there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, full of sores, who was laid at his gate, 21desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the Rich man’s table. Moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. 22So it was that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels to Abraham’s bosom. The Rich man also died and was buried.

23And being in torments in Hades, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. 24“Then he cried and said, ‘Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.’ 25But Abraham said, ‘Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things; but now he is comforted and you are tormented. 26And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that those who want to pass from here to you cannot, nor can those from there pass to us.’

27“Then he said, ‘I beg you therefore, father, that you would send him to my father’s house, 28for I have five brothers, that he may testify to them, lest they also come to

this place of torment.’ 29Abraham said to him, ‘They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.’ 30And he said, ‘No, father Abraham; but if one goes to them from the dead, they will repent.’ 31But he said to him, ‘If they do not hear Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rise from the dead.’”

9. There are some, like the nation of Israel, who have been blinded by Elohim so they could not be saved at this time. However, after the Deliverer, Yeshua Christ, returns to this earth then they will have a time in which they can be saved.

- *Romans 11:7-8 (NKJV)*

7What then? Israel has not obtained what it seeks; but the elect have obtained it, and the rest were blinded. 8Just as it is written:

*“Elohim has given them a spirit of stupor,
Eyes that they should not see
And ears that they should not hear,
To this very day.”*

- *Romans 11:25-32 (NKJV)*

25For I do not desire, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own opinion, that blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. 26And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written:

*“The Deliverer will come out of Zion,
And He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob;
27For this is My covenant with them,
When I take away their sins.”*

The End of the Beginning

28Concerning the gospel they are enemies for your sake, but concerning the election they are beloved for the sake of the fathers. 29For the gifts and the calling of Elohim are irrevocable 30For as you were once disobedient to Elohim, yet have now obtained mercy through their disobedience, 31even so these also have now been disobedient, that through the mercy shown you they also may obtain mercy. 32For Elohim has committed them all to disobedience, that He might have mercy on all.

The time for their hope for salvation will take place after Christ returns. Revelation chapter 20 mentions a second resurrection in which the dead stand before Elohim and are judged by the books. It also plainly states that the book of life is opened. This is not a sentencing judgment but a time wherein they are given the opportunity to follow the way of Elohim which includes accepting Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior.

- *Revelation 20:4-5 (NKJV)*

4And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Yeshua and for the word of Elohim, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. 5But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

After the thousand-year reign of Christ, Satan is released for a season and then again chained and sent back to hell. Then the rest of the dead mentioned in verse 5 are resurrected and given a chance at salvation.

- *Revelation 20:11-12 (NKJV)*

11Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. 12And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before Elohim, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books.

Read the following verses in Ezekiel describing a resurrection of the dead. This host of people is said to be ‘*the whole house of Israel*’. When life enters these people they will say, “*Our bones are dry, our hope is lost, and we ourselves are cut off!*” Then it says Elohim will put His Spirit in them and they will live. This scripture certainly corresponds with Revelation chapter 20 as there is no other resurrection of the dead mentioned in the Bible.

- *Ezekiel 38:1-14 (NKJV)*

1The hand of the Lord came upon me and brought me out in the Spirit of the Lord, and set me down in the midst of the valley; and it was full of bones. 2Then He caused me to pass by them all around, and behold, there were very many in the open valley; and indeed they were very dry. 3And He said to me, “Son of man, can these bones live?”

So I answered, “O Lord ELOHIM, You know.”

4Again He said to me, “Prophecy to these bones, and say to them, ‘O dry bones, hear the word of the Lord! 5Thus says the Lord ELOHIM to these bones: “Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. 6I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath

The End of the Beginning

in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am the Lord. ”””

7So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and suddenly a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to bone. 8Indeed, as I looked, the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them over; but there was no breath in them. 9Also He said to me, “Prophecy to the breath, prophecy, son of man, and say to the breath, ‘Thus says the Lord ELOHIM: “Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live. ”””

10So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived, and stood upon their feet, an exceedingly great army.

11Then He said to me, “Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel. They indeed say, ‘Our bones are dry, our hope is lost, and we ourselves are cut off!’

12Therefore prophecy and say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord ELOHIM: “Behold, O My people, I will open your graves and cause you to come up from your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. 13Then you shall know that I am the Lord, when I have opened your graves, O My people, and brought you up from your graves. 14I will put My Spirit in you, and you shall live, and I will place you in your own land. Then you shall know that I, the Lord, have spoken it and performed it,” says the Lord. ’”

These people according to Revelation 20:12 will be judged from the books before being saved. What books is this verse talking about? I can think of none other than the ‘books of the Bible’.

10. Over and over Elohim's Word states that all will reap what they sow. When will this happen for those who are not saved yet have not been sent to hell fire? The second resurrection mentioned in Revelation chapter 20 and Ezekiel chapter 37 most likely will be the time and place where this happens. If they have some form of consciousness during death then they surely will experience a time of reaping even then for what they have sown. The second resurrection is also the time of fulfillment of Christ's words to the Pharisees.

- *Matthew 21:31(NKJV)*

Yeshua said to them, "Assuredly, I say to you that tax collectors and harlots enter the kingdom of Elohim before you."

11. Satan and his ministers slant the very Word of Elohim in trying to deceive Elohim's people.

- *2 Corinthians 11:13-15 (NKJV)*

13For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. 14And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. 15Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness, whose end will be according to their works.

12. Moderate drinking of alcoholic beverages is not a sin according to Elohim's Word including the example of Yeshua Christ in spite of what some church organizations believe and teach.

The End of the Beginning

- *1 Timothy 5:23 (NKJV)*
23No longer drink only water, but use a little wine for your stomach's sake and your frequent infirmities.

- *Matthew 11:18-19 (NKJV)*
18For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, 'He has a demon.' 19The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, 'Look, a glutton and a winebibber, a friend of tax collectors and sinners!' But wisdom is justified by her children."

- *Deuteronomy 14:22-26 (NKJV)*
22"You shall truly tithe all the increase of your grain that the field produces year by year. 23And you shall eat before the Lord your Elohim, in the place where He chooses to make His name abide, the tithe of your grain and your new wine and your oil, of the firstborn of your herds and your flocks, that you may learn to fear the Lord your Elohim always. 24But if the journey is too long for you, so that you are not able to carry the tithe, or if the place where the Lord your Elohim chooses to put His name is too far from you, when the Lord your Elohim has blessed you, 25then you shall exchange it for money, take the money in your hand, and go to the place which the Lord your Elohim chooses. 26And you shall spend that money for whatever your heart desires: for oxen or sheep, for wine or similar drink, for whatever your heart desires; you shall eat there before the Lord your Elohim, and you shall rejoice, you and your household.

However, regular and continued excessive drinking resulting in drunkenness is condemned.

- *Proverbs 20:1 (NKJV)*

*1 Wine is a mocker,
Strong drink is a brawler,
And whoever is led astray by it is not wise.*

- *Proverbs 31:4-7 (NKJV)*

*4 It is not for kings, O Lemuel,
It is not for kings to drink wine,
Nor for princes intoxicating drink;
5 Lest they drink and forget the law,
And pervert the justice of all the afflicted.
6 Give strong drink to him who is perishing,
And wine to those who are bitter of heart.
7 Let him drink and forget his poverty,
And remember his misery no more.*

- *Proverbs 23:20-21 (NKJV)*

*20 Do not mix with winebibbers,
Or with gluttonous eaters of meat;
21 For the drunkard and the glutton will come to poverty,
And drowsiness will clothe a man with rags.*

13. Elohim exists outside of time as we know it. He can see a thousand of our years as if it were a day and he can also see one of our days as if it lasted a thousand years. This is how Elohim can see everything everyone on earth is doing all the time if He so chooses.

- *2 Peter 3:8 (NKJV)*

8 But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord

The End of the Beginning

one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

14. Satan is bound by an angel and cast into the bottomless pit.

- *Revelation 20:1-3 (NKJV)*

1Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. 2He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years 3and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while.

15. The Beast and False Prophet will be thrown into the lake of fire.

- *Revelation 19:20 (NKJV)*

20Then the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who worked signs in his presence, by which he deceived those who received the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. These two were cast alive into the lake of fire burning with brimstone.

16. A time of one hundred years may be given to those in the second resurrection to accept Yeshua Christ as Lord and Savior.

- *Isaiah 65:20 (NKJV)*

*20 “No more shall an infant from there live but a few days,
Nor an old man who has not fulfilled his days;
For the child shall die one hundred years old,
But the sinner being one hundred years old shall be
accursed.*

17. We shall be like Christ when transformed or resurrected at His coming. Just as He walked through closed doors or walls after being resurrected so can we.

- *John 20:19 (NKJV)*

19Then, the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled, for fear of the Jews, Yeshua came and stood in the midst, and said to them, “Peace be with you.”

-

- *John 20:26 (NKJV)*

26And after eight days His disciples were again inside, and Thomas with them. Yeshua came, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, “Peace to you!”

18. From the time Saul became king over Israel he did not accept responsibility for doing wrong. At one point he even blamed the prophet Samuel for his wrong doing.

- *1 Samuel 13:9-13 (NKJV)*

9So Saul said, “Bring a burnt offering and peace offerings here to me.” And he offered the burnt offering. 10Now it happened, as soon as he had finished presenting the burnt offering, that Samuel came; and Saul went out to meet him, that he might greet him.

11And Samuel said, “What have you done?”

Saul said, “When I saw that the people were scattered from me, and that you did not come within the days appointed, and that the Philistines gathered together at Michmash,

12then I said, ‘The Philistines will now come down on me at Gilgal, and I have not made supplication to the Lord.’ Therefore I felt compelled, and offered a burnt offering.”

The End of the Beginning

13And Samuel said to Saul, “You have done foolishly. You have not kept the commandment of the Lord your Elohim, which He commanded you.

- *1 Samuel 15:18-21 (NKJV)*

18Now the Lord sent you on a mission, and said, ‘Go, and utterly destroy the sinners, the Amalekites, and fight against them until they are consumed.’

19Why then did you not obey the voice of the Lord? Why did you swoop down on the spoil, and do evil in the sight of the Lord?”

20And Saul said to Samuel, “But I have obeyed the voice of the Lord, and gone on the mission on which the Lord sent me, and brought back Agag king of Amalek; I have utterly destroyed the Amalekites. 21But the people took of the plunder, sheep and oxen, the best of the things which should have been utterly destroyed, to sacrifice to the Lord your Elohim in Gilgal.”

- 19.** Without love knowledge and even prophecy is meaningless.

- *1 Corinthians 13:2 (NKJV)*

2And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing.

- 20.** Without faith it is impossible to please Elohim.

- *Hebrews 11:6 (NKJV)*

6But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to Elohim must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.

21. Just like Elohim imputed righteousness to Abraham because of his faith (read Romans chapter 4) Elohim often does not impute sin when a person does so ignorantly and without deceit.

- *Psalms 32:1-2 (NKJV)*

*1Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven,
Whose sin is covered.*

*2Blessed is the man to whom the Lord does not impute
iniquity,
And in whose spirit there is no deceit.*

22. Authoritarian behavior with leaders lording over each other and the membership simply is not Elohim's way of ruling.

- *Matthew 20:25-28 (NKJV)*

*25But Jesus [Yeshua] called them to Himself and said,
"You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them,
and those who are great exercise authority over them.*

*26Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to
become great among you, let him be your servant. 27And
whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your
slave— 28just as the Son of Man did not come to be served,
but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many."*

23. Several prophecies described the descendants of Ephraim in the 'latter days'. The United States of America is the only nation in history that actually fulfilled that prophecy and maintained it until the time of the end.

- *Genesis 48:14-19 (NKJV)*

*14Then Israel stretched out his right hand and laid it on
Ephraim's head, who was the younger, and his left hand on
Manasseh's head, guiding his hands knowingly, for*

The End of the Beginning

Manasseh was the firstborn. 15And he blessed Joseph, and said:

*“Elohim, before whom my fathers Abraham and Isaac walked,
The Elohim who has fed me all my life long to this day,
16The Angel who has redeemed me from all evil,
Bless the lads;
Let my name be named upon them,
And the name of my fathers Abraham and Isaac;
And let them grow into a multitude in the midst of the earth.”*

17Now when Joseph saw that his father laid his right hand on the head of Ephraim, it displeased him; so he took hold of his father’s hand to remove it from Ephraim’s head to Manasseh’s head.

18And Joseph said to his father, “Not so, my father, for this one is the firstborn; put your right hand on his head.”

19But his father refused and said, “I know, my son, I know. He also shall become a people, and he also shall be great; but truly his younger brother shall be greater than he, and his descendants shall become a multitude of nations.”

24. Elohim promised protection for His people from perils and pestilence.

- *Psalms 91:1-16 (NKJV)*

*1He who dwells in the secret place of the Most High
Shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.*

*2I will say of the Lord, “He is my refuge and my fortress;
My Elohim, in Him I will trust.”*

3Surely He shall deliver you from the snare of the fowler

And from the perilous pestilence.

*4He shall cover you with His feathers,
And under His wings you shall take refuge;
His truth shall be your shield and buckler.*

*5You shall not be afraid of the terror by night,
Nor of the arrow that flies by day,*

*6Nor of the pestilence that walks in darkness,
Nor of the destruction that lays waste at noonday.*

*7A thousand may fall at your side,
And ten thousand at your right hand;
But it shall not come near you.*

*8Only with your eyes shall you look,
And see the reward of the wicked.*

*9Because you have made the Lord, who is my refuge,
Even the Most High, your dwelling place,*

*10No evil shall befall you,
Nor shall any plague come near your dwelling;*

*11For He shall give His angels charge over you,
To keep you in all your ways.*

*12In their hands they shall bear you up,
Lest you dash your foot against a stone.*

*13You shall tread upon the lion and the cobra,
The young lion and the serpent you shall trample underfoot.*

*14“Because he has set his love upon Me, therefore I will
deliver him;*

I will set him on high, because he has known My name.

*15He shall call upon Me, and I will answer him;
I will be with him in trouble;
I will deliver him and honor him.*

*16With long life I will satisfy him,
And show him My salvation.”*

The End of the Beginning

25. Yeshua made His ‘tabernacle’ or habitation with mankind in human form.

- *Hebrews 9:11-12 (NKJV)*

*11 But Christ came as High Priest of the good things to come, with the greater and more perfect **tabernacle** not made with hands, that is, not of this creation. 12 Not with the blood of goats and calves, but with His own blood He entered the Most Holy Place once for all, having obtained eternal redemption.*

- **tabernacle: G4633** *skay-nay'* Apparently akin to [G4632](#) and [G4639](#); a *tent* or cloth hut (literally or figuratively):—habitation, tabernacle.

26. Isaiah saw in a vision a time in which all will fulfill their appointed time of life. It mentions that a child will live one hundred years. It also says a sinner who lives one hundred years shall be accursed.

Isaiah 65:20 (NKJV)

*20 “No more shall an infant from there live but a few days,
Nor an old man who has not fulfilled his days;
For the child shall die one hundred years old,
But the sinner being one hundred years old shall be
accursed.*

The End of the Beginning

About the Author



The author used the G.I. Bill to go to college and was a National Merit Scholar graduating from the University of Tennessee with a B.S. in Operations Research. This was followed in about ten years with a M.S. in Engineering Technology from Eastern Kentucky University.

His primary career was in Industrial Engineering for about 25 years in which he was instrumental in originating and implementing cost reduction projects that saved the companies he worked for hundreds of thousands of dollars in most of those years. Many of these projects involved his inventions of fixtures and developing new methods of operation and control of processes that not only saved money, they greatly improved the quality of the products manufactured. During his career, he worked with Corporate Presidents, Group and Division Managers, Data Processing Managers, Accountants; on down to plant managers, supervisors, plant work forces, and maintenance in bringing improvements to numerous plants. This required being able to present ideas and concepts that were clearly understood and accepted by everyone at every level.

Before going to college, the author completed two tours of duty in the United States Air Force reaching the rank of Staff Sergeant. During the Viet Nam War, the author was stationed on Okinawa for about three and a half years. His position on an intercontinental missile crew was Mechanic One in charge of inertial guidance and flight controls of four nuclear missiles in one of eight hardened sites over 100 feet below the surface of the island of Okinawa. His position was also part of the launch crew that if war had broken out, he along with the Launch Officer in charge would authenticate the launch orders, and then would together push the buttons to launch the four missiles. He worked his way up to the top Mechanic One position in the Standard Eval Crew as part of the

Inspector General of the Commander in Chief of the Pacific Air Force.

After leaving the Air Force, the author worked in residential and commercial construction several years. He ran a business of building houses and later he ran several crews that excavated and built the framework of concrete forms for residential driveways. He also worked building forms for concrete walls and floors on high-rise buildings. While going to college, the author was nearly always working on remodeling the homes he bought and lived in which always more than doubled his investment when sold. This enabled him to completely pay off all expenses for his college education.

In the Spring of 1994, everything changed for the author. The author experienced what he believed was a vision from God in which he had a face-to-face meeting with Jesus [Yeshua] Christ. He was told that Christianity had lost its way over the last two thousand years. It had become a religion based on the Traditions of Men not the Truth of God as written in the Word of God, the Holy Bible. He was asked to be Christ's Minister. Then he was told to study the Word of God and write what he learned only from the Holy Scriptures and publish and tell of it to all who would listen. In giving this commission, Jesus [Yeshua] Christ made him Christ's Apostle and Prophet as his writings would present the True Christian Beliefs, Doctrines, and Practices Based on the Holy Scriptures, Not Traditions of Men and would also involve prophetic dreams and visions.

The author was ordained as a Minister in a church organization that he served in for nearly ten years. He continually traveled to congregations in Michigan, Ohio, Indiana, Kentucky, Tennessee, Arkansas, Louisiana, Texas, Georgia, and Florida preaching in different congregations each week. He also went to Canada, Jamaica, Australia, and to many Feast sites preaching what Yeshua [Jesus] Christ revealed to him in the Word of God. The

The End of the Beginning

primary comment from individuals in those congregations was “When is Richard coming back?”

The author left that church organization and has occasionally preached in several independent churches while he concentrated on writing what was revealed to him in the Word of God. He also had been experiencing dreams that inspired him to start writing books. So, far he has written and completed a trilogy called *The Story of the New Immortals*. The First book is *Part 1* and tells about Eternity Past, *The Beginning of the Beginning*. The Second book is *Part 2* and tells about *The Early Years of the Christ, Including the Missing Years*. The Third book is *Part 3* and tells about Eternity Future, *The End of the Beginning*.

Did you notice that *Part 2* about *The Early Years of the Christ*, is in the middle of this Trilogy? Richard believes that Jesus Christ should be in the middle of everything we think, say, and do. Read the following verse in your Bible including what follows it. If the mind of God is guiding our lives we will live as Jesus would in our shoes and be part of the Wedding Supper of the Lamb when He returns.

Philippians 2:5 (NKJV)

⁵Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus,

The End of the Beginning

Books by this author: *Richard O'Decatur*

***The Story of the New Immortals,
Part 1:***

The Beginning of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography
[[about](#) 358 Pages]

This story tells of the beginning of all things. We find Elohim [God], the Father, Yahweh; Elohim, the Son, Yeshua [Jesus]; and Elohim, the Holy Spirit having always existed in eternity. In this story, we go back before the creation of the world mentioned in Genesis Chapter 1 into eternity past, when Elohim began creating what is called the third heaven and the angelic beings, and continues to the creation of the earth.

It tells of a Great Archangel, possibly named Lucifer, who got one third of the angelic realm to rebel against Elohim. It presents the creation of the earth, how it became without form and void. It tells of a somewhat re-creation of earth and populating it with all living things and finally the creation Adam and Eve. It tells of their life in the Garden of Eden, ending with their sin of disobedience and being driven from the Garden.

Then it tells of the population of mankind throughout the earth and the growth of evil. Then Noah and his family build the Ark and survive with pairs of animals and birds when the rains came and waters flood the entire earth killing all that breathed air on the face of the earth. It tells of the spread of mankind from Noah's three sons and their wives. Then Nimrod comes on the scene with his wife, Semiramis spreading the Mystery Babylon Pagan religion until the building of tower of Babel and the dividing of the languages of

mankind as they begin spreading out from Mesopotamia. It ends with the calling of Abram [Abraham] mentioned in Genesis Chapter 12.

.....

***The Story of the New Immortals,
Part 2:***

***The Early Years of the Christ,
Including
The Missing Years***

A Fictional Biography
[[about 33246](#) Pages]

—————Many of you have read the four gospel accounts of the life of Jesus Christ. You find many gaps in the story of His life from His birth to age thirty when He began His Ministry. Have you ever wondered what events prepared the land of Judea and Galilee for the Christ to be born, grow up, and begin His earthly ministry? Have you ever wondered what life was like for Jesus during His childhood? The Bible only tells us about His birth, then jumps two years to when the Magi came to Bethlehem. Immediately afterwards, the family of the Christ escaped to Egypt. After living for some time in Egypt, they return to Nazareth.

Then we fast-forward ten years to when He was about twelve, when the family goes to Jerusalem for the Passover. The next we read about the life of the Christ, eighteen years have passed and He is about thirty years of age. Jesus is baptized by His second cousin, John the Baptist, and He goes into the wilderness for forty days and nights. What happened during those missing eighteen years

The End of the Beginning

in which he became a teenager, went through life in His twenties, and finally reached the age of thirty where we find Him being baptized?

As we read in the Gospels about Jesus entering the synagogue in Nazareth, we find people do not really know Him except by being associated with His mother, Mary and His brothers and sisters. This gives the impression that Jesus had been away from Nazareth for those eighteen years. I have always wondered who Joseph of Arimathea was and my research has found that he was not only a relative, but played a major role in the life of Jesus.

I have written a Fictional Biography that I believe will answer these questions and many more. Again, as in my other two books, I have felt God's inspiration in taking on this monumental task. After considerable research, and prayer, my dreams began again as the Holy Spirit guided my mind and my hands as I started writing this story about ten years ago and have recently finished it in 2020.

.....

***The Story of the New Immortals,
Part 3:***

The End of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography
[[about](#) 365 Pages]

This story takes place just after Jesus Christ's Second Coming. While it looks back at events that took place before His return, it primarily focuses on the work of the Saints of God, the Father, Yahweh; and Jesus Christ as He reigns from Jerusalem during the Millennium and beyond.

This story begins as the Wedding Supper of the Lamb is just beginning and those who were resurrected from the dead and those who are transformed in the twinkling of an eye celebrate their triumph over sin. It tells of the preparation to attack the forces of Satan as their army closes in on Jerusalem. Then Jesus Christ, King of Kings and Lord of Lords leads the armies from Heaven to the earth. They destroy the two hundred-million-man army of Satan. Satan is captured and bound in chains and is cast into a Pit in Hell. The Antichrist and False Prophet are taken, judged by Christ, and are then lowered alive into the Lake of Fire that is a portal to Hell fire.

The Saints of God are sent on missions to gather those who have survived the Great Tribulation and Day of the Lord as God poured out punishment on those who refused to turn from sin and evil as you can read in the Book of Revelation. Then the rebuilding of millions of cities, infrastructure, buildings to manufacture things, and billions of homes. These will house those who are raised in the second resurrection and allow them to live during their time of judgment.

.....

The End of the Beginning

You can get a Paperback copy of these books by contacting me at the address on this page. Your books will be paperback measuring 5 ½ inches wide and 8 ½ inches long and will be about 1 inch thick. They are spiral bound which allows them the ease of being opened up and turned back to lie flat as you read them. I have read that this is the best and most lasting binding for paperback books. Some time in the future, I hope to be making these books available as electronic copies such as EPUB and later possibly on Kindle where my costs will be less as the books will not have to be printed and shipped.

Thank you for your interest and support. Please write to me



and tell me which paperback book you would like, your return address, and these books will be sent free of charge to you as long as I can afford to do so. If you are able and wish to do so, you can send a donation of \$10 or whatever

you are able to send for each book for USA orders to help make these books available to those who are not able to send a donation. Make checks out to *Richard O'Decatur*.

Postal mail address:

R. Wayne Publishing Co.

Attention: Books by Richard O'Decatur

108 Kimbrough Ct.

Clarksville, TN 37043

For any comments about my writings or what I believe, please contact me, the Author, ***Richard O'Decatur*** At the address above or by email: richardodecatur@gmail.com

Checkout my Website: AttainingBibleTruths.com

To find well over a hundred Articles that amount to over a thousand pages written by me, the Author, ***Richard O'Decatur*** and others in my voluminous book: ***Christian Beliefs, Doctrines, and Practices Based on the Holy Scriptures, Not Traditions of Men.***